# MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING

EDITED BY W. J. ROLFE

Dorothy Humphrey

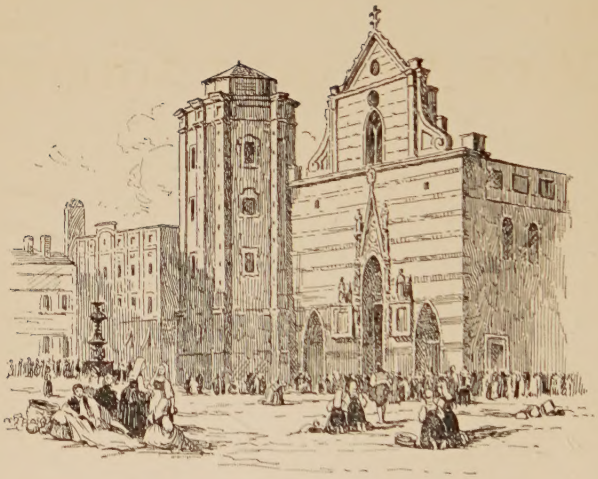
49 BAY
92019
3 50

10 Scenes III

P- 66

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2025

https://archive.org/details/shakespearescome0000will_b3b4



EXTERIOR OF CATHEDRAL, MESSINA

# SHAKESPEARE'S

COMEDY OF

# MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING

EDITED, WITH NOTES

BY

WILLIAM J. ROLFE, LITT.D.

FORMERLY HEAD MASTER OF THE HIGH SCHOOL, CAMBRIDGE, MASS.

*ILLUSTRATED*

NEW YORK ·:· CINCINNATI ·:· CHICAGO

AMERICAN BOOK COMPANY

COPYRIGHT, 1878 AND 1898, BY
HARPER & BROTHERS.

COPYRIGHT, 1905 AND 1906, BY
WILLIAM J. ROLFE.

---

MUCH ADO.
W. P. 4

# PREFATORY NOTE

This play, which I first edited in 1878, is now presented in a thoroughly revised form, on the same general plan as its predecessors in the new series. In this work I have been much indebted to Dr. Furness's "New Variorum" edition, published in 1899, as the references to it in the Notes inadequately show.

# CONTENTS


| | PAGE |
|---|---|
| INTRODUCTION TO MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING | 9 |
| The History of the Play | 9 |
| The Sources of the Plot | 10 |
| General Comments on the Play | 12 |
| MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING | 21 |
| Act I | 23 |
| Act II | 40 |
| Act III | 67 |
| Act IV | 90 |
| Act V | 107 |
| NOTES | 135 |
| APPENDIX | |
| The Title of the Play | 233 |
| Comments on Some of the Characters | 235 |
| The Time-Analysis of the Play | 244 |
| List of Characters in the Play | 246 |
| INDEX OF WORDS AND PHRASES EXPLAINED | 249 |

STREET IN MESSINA

Messina from the Sea

# MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING

## The History of the Play

*Much Ado about Nothing* was first published in quarto form in 1600, but was not reprinted until it appeared in the folio of 1623. The printers of the latter seem to have used a copy of the quarto belonging to the library of the theatre and corrected for the purposes of the stage; but the changes are mostly very slight, and seldom for the better. In iv. 2 "*Kemp*" is prefixed to most of the speeches of Dogberry, and "*Cowley*" or "*Couley*" to those of Verges. These are the names of actors of the time, and were probably inserted in the stage copy for their convenience in learning their parts. With the fourth speech in this scene we find the prefix "*Andrew*," a name that cannot be identified with that of any comic actor of the period; but perhaps, as

Halliwell-Phillipps suggests, it was the familiar appellation of some one in the company.

As the play is not mentioned in Meres's list, while, according to the title-page of 1600, it had then been "sundrie times publikely acted," it was probably written in 1599.

## The Sources of the Plot

Some of the earlier incidents of the serious portion of the plot may have been taken from the story of Ariodante and Ginevra in Ariosto's *Orlando Furioso* (canto v.); where Polinesso, in order to revenge himself on the princess Ginevra (who has rejected his suit and pledged her troth to Ariodante), induces her attendant Dalinda to personate the princess, and to appear at night on a balcony to which he ascends by a rope-ladder in sight of Ariodante, whom he has stationed there to witness the infidelity of Ginevra. A translation of this story was entered on the Stationers' Registers in 1566; and in 1582 a play entitled *Ariodante and Genevora* was performed before the Queen "by Mr. Mulcaster's children." Spenser had also introduced the story, with some variations, in the *Faerie Queene* (ii. 4. 17 fol.), and this part of the poem was published in 1590.

It is more probable, however, that Shakespeare drew this part of his materials from the 22d Novel of Bandello, which had been translated into French by Belleforest in his *Histoires Tragiques*, and probably also into English, though the version is not extant. In Ban-

dello's book, as in the play, the scene is laid at Messina; the father of the slandered girl is Lionato; and the friend of her lover is Don Piero, or Pedro. How closely the poet has followed the novel will be seen from the outline of the latter given by Staunton: "Don Piero of Arragon returns from a victorious campaign, and with the gallant cavalier Timbreo di Cardona is at Messina. Timbreo falls in love with Fenicia, the daughter of Lionato di Lionati, a gentleman of Messina, and, like Claudio in the play, courts her by proxy. He is successful in his suit, and the lovers are betrothed; but the course of true love is impeded by one Girondo, a disappointed admirer of the lady, who determines to prevent the marriage. In pursuance of this object, he insinuates to Timbreo that Fenicia is false, and offers to show him a stranger scaling her chamber window. The unhappy lover consents to watch; and at the appointed hour Girondo and a servant in the plot pass him disguised, and the latter is seen to ascend a ladder and enter the house of Lionato. In an agony of rage and jealousy, Timbreo in the morning accuses the lady of disloyalty, and rejects the alliance. Fenicia falls into a swoon; a dangerous illness supervenes; and the father, to stifle all rumours hurtful to her fame, removes her to a retired house of his brother, proclaims her death, and solemnly performs her funeral obsequies. Girondo is now struck with remorse at having 'slandered to death' a creature so innocent and beautiful. He confesses his treachery to Timbreo, and both de-

termine to restore the reputation of the lost one and undergo any penance her family may impose. Lionato is merciful, and requires only from Timbreo that he shall wed a lady whom he recommends, and whose face shall be concealed till the marriage ceremony is over. The *dénouement* is obvious. Timbreo espouses the mysterious fair one, and finds in her his injured, loving, and beloved Fenicia."

The comic portion of the play is Shakespeare's own, as indeed is everything else in it except this mere skeleton of tragic incident. Claudio and Hero, Don Pedro and Don John, are as really his own creations as Benedick and Beatrice, Dogberry and Verges, who have no part in Bandello's novel or Ariosto's poem.

Furness believes that Shakespeare was indebted for portions of his plot to an earlier play rather than to Ariosto or Bandello, but to me this seems highly improbable.

### General Comments on the Play

It is a tribute of no slight significance to Shakespeare's skill in the delineation of character that we instinctively regard the personages in his mimic world as real men and women, and are not satisfied to think of them only as they appear on the stage. We like to follow them after they have left the scene, and to speculate concerning their subsequent history. This is well illustrated by not a few of the criticisms on the present play. The commentators are not willing to dismiss

Benedick and Beatrice when the drama closes, without discussing the question whether they probably "lived happily ever after."

Mrs. Jameson says: "On the whole we dismiss Benedick and Beatrice to their matrimonial bonds rather with a sense of amusement than a feeling of congratulation or sympathy; rather with an acknowledgment that they are well-matched and worthy of each other, than with any well-founded expectation of their domestic tranquillity. If, as Benedick asserts, they are both 'too wise to woo peaceably,' it may be added that both are too wise, too witty, and too wilful to live peaceably together. We have some misgivings about Beatrice — some apprehensions that poor Benedick will not escape the 'predestinate scratched face' which he had foretold to him who should win and wear this quick-witted and pleasant-spirited lady; yet when we recollect that to the wit and imperious temper of Beatrice is united a magnanimity of spirit which would naturally place her far above all selfishness and all paltry struggles for power — when we perceive in the midst of her sarcastic levity and volubility of tongue, so much of generous affection and such a high sense of female virtue and honour, we are inclined to hope the best."

The poet Campbell, in his introduction to the play, remarks: "Mrs. Jameson concludes with hoping that Beatrice will live happy with Benedick, but I have no such hope; and my final anticipation in reading the

play is the certainty that Beatrice will provoke her Benedick to give her much and just conjugal castigation. She is an odious woman. . . . I once knew such a pair. The lady was a perfect Beatrice; she railed hypocritically at wedlock before her marriage, and with bitter sincerity after it. . . . Beatrice is not to be compared, but contrasted, with Rosalind, who is equally witty; but the sparkling sayings of Rosalind are like gems upon her head at court, and like dewdrops on her bright hair in the woodland forest."

Verplanck, after quoting this passage, comments upon it thus: "We extract this criticism, partly in deference to Campbell's general exquisite taste and reverent appreciation of Shakespeare's genius, and partly as an example of the manner in which accidental personal associations influence taste and opinion. . . . Beatrice's faults are such as ordinarily spring from the consciousness of talent and beauty, accompanied with the high spirits of youth and health, and the play of a lively fancy. Her brilliant intellectual qualities are associated with strong and generous feelings, high confidence in female truth and virtue, warm attachment to her friends, and quick, undisguised indignation at wrong and injustice. There is the rich material which the experience and the sorrows of maturer life, the affection and the duties of the wife and the mother, can gradually shape into the noblest forms of matronly excellence; and such, we doubt not, was the result shown in the married life of Beatrice."

Furnivall says on the same subject: "Beatrice is the sauciest, most piquant, sparkling, madcap girl that Shakespeare ever drew, and yet a loving, deep-natured, true woman too. . . . She gives her heart to Benedick. The two understand one another. We all know what it means. The brightest, sunniest married life, comfort in sorrow, doubling of joy. . . . The poet Campbell's story of his pair was an utter mistake: he never knew a Beatrice."

Gervinus, after discussing the question at considerable length, and with due German profundity, comes to the same wise conclusion: "We have no reason to be anxious either for the constancy or for the peaceableness of this pair. The poet has bestowed upon them two names of happy augury."

Charles Cowden-Clarke, while he defends Beatrice against Campbell, strangely expresses the opinion that she does not really love Benedick. Their union, he thinks, was "like ninety-nine hundredths of the marriages that take place in society," one of mere friendship rather than strong mutual affection. He quotes in support of this view what Beatrice says in the arbour after being led to believe that Benedick is in love with her:—

> "And, Benedick, love on; I will requite thee,
> Taming my wild heart to thy loving hand.
> If thou dost love, my kindness shall incite thee
> To bind our loves up in a holy band;
> For others say thou dost deserve, and I
> Believe it better than reportingly."

He adds: "There is no avowal of passion, methinks, in that speech. It is merely an acquiescent one — 'If thou *dost* love, my *kindness* shall incite thee' to tie the knot." So good a critic as Cowden-Clarke should have remembered that *kindness* in Shakespeare, as in other writers of the time, is often used in a much stronger sense than now. Schmidt, in his *Lexicon*, puts fully one-third of the instances in which the poet uses the word under the head of "affection, tenderness, love;" and this passage is very properly one of the number. Another striking one is in the 152d *Sonnet:*—

> "For I have sworn deep oaths of thy deep kindness,
> Oaths of thy love, thy truth, thy constancy;"

where the second line explains the first. In this speech of Beatrice *kindness* is evidently used for variety of expression, the word *love*, in one form or another, occurring in every one of the four lines. The speech is really full of tender passion. It may strike one at first as too strong an outburst of affection for so sudden a one — and from the sarcastic Beatrice withal! But, as Mrs. Jameson and others have noted, Beatrice was ready to fall in love with Benedick at the opening of the play. Now that she believes him to be in love with her, the response of her own heart is prompt and unrestrained. No utterance of affection could be more impulsive or more earnest. "Contempt, farewell! and maiden pride, adieu!" are almost her first words; and

then follows that spontaneous and clearly joyous apostrophe, —

> "And, Benedick, love on; I will requite thee,
> Taming my wild heart to thy loving hand."

And at once she goes on to the pledge of marriage, which no woman who did not love would have been so quick to do. Juliet's prompt surrender of herself to Romeo, when she is assured of his love, is not more sudden and unreserved. She is not more ready than Beatrice to look forward to the marriage which is to be the crown and consummation of that love.

When Don Pedro first suggested that Beatrice would be an excellent wife for Benedick, Leonato replied: "O Lord! if they were but a week married they would talk themselves mad." Some of the critics, as we have seen, have been confident that it was an unfortunate match; but, for myself, I have no doubt that it was one of the marriages made in heaven and happy to the end.

The dramatic construction of the play deserves brief consideration before bringing this imperfect discussion of it to a close. It is a curious fact that the underplot far surpasses in interest the main story to which it is subordinate. A careless reader, if asked what the main plot is, might hastily decide that it is the part played by Benedick and Beatrice, including the stratagem by which their friends lead them to fall in love with each other; but this is merely an episode in the story of Claudio and Hero. That forms the main plot, and,

as we have seen, it was borrowed by the dramatist from the Italian Bandello (to whom he had already been indebted for the chief incidents of *Romeo and Juliet*), while the underplot, with its two brilliant characters, was Shakespeare's own invention. The two stories are interwoven so skilfully that, if we did not know their history, we should never suspect that they were not originally parts of a single narrative.

The first introduction of the underplot indicates plainly enough its episodical character. The plan for bringing Benedick and Beatrice "into a mountain of affection the one with the other" is suggested by Don Pedro, who has already shown his talent for match-making, to fill the interim between the betrothal and the marriage of Claudio. It is carried out to the point where each of the victims believes the other to be desperately in love. Being, as we have seen, ready to love, they become inflamed with mutual passion, but have not declared it to each other. Meanwhile the plot of Don John has led to the rupture between Claudio and Hero. Both Beatrice and Benedick believe Hero to be innocent, and their common interest in her vindication prepares the way for a mutual confession of love. Beatrice is weeping over her cousin's unmerited grief and disgrace, and Benedick tries to comfort her. He tells her that he believes Hero is wronged. "Ah," exclaims Beatrice, "how much might the man deserve of me that would right her!" This leads to the mutual declaration of love and to the promise of Benedick that

he will challenge Claudio. This scene is the link that connects the two stories of the plot; and at the same time it aids in the development of both. It was only in some such way that the love story could go on. Only in such a situation, when the lovers were compelled to be serious and earnest, can we imagine them coming to an understanding as to their real feelings towards each other. "Through the catastrophe that has overwhelmed Hero the way is made easy for the mutual confession of love."

From this point the double plot is rapidly and happily unravelled, and after much ado about nothing all that has been confused and perplexed is made joyously clear. The dead Hero is alive again, Claudio escapes the punishment he merits, the good Friar who suggests the device of her pretended death — more fortunate than his brother of Verona in a similar well-meant deception — is happy that his confidence in the innocence of Hero is justified; and marriage bells are about to ring for two pairs of lovers instead of one. Honest Dogberry, we may believe, congratulates himself on his share in the fortunate result, and is more pompous and self-conceited than ever. He has a right, however, to be proud that though written down an ass he has accomplished, in his blundering way, what wiser men had failed to achieve — the baffling of Don John's malice and the vindication of the gentle Hero.

# MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING

## *DRAMATIS PERSONÆ*

DON PEDRO, Prince of Arragon.
DON JOHN, his bastard brother.
CLAUDIO, a young Lord of Florence.
BENEDICK, a young Lord of Padua.
LEONATO, Governor of Messina.
ANTONIO, his brother.
BALTHAZAR, attendant on Don Pedro.
CONRADE, } followers of Don John.
BORACHIO, }
FRIAR FRANCIS.
DOGBERRY, a constable.
VERGES, a headborough.
A Sexton.
A Boy.

HERO, daughter to Leonato.
BEATRICE, niece to Leonato.
MARGARET, } gentlewomen attending on Hero.
URSULA, }

Messengers, Watch, Attendants, etc.

SCENE: *Messina.*

"WALKING IN A THICK-PLEACHED ALLEY"

## ACT I

### SCENE I. *Before Leonato's House*

*Enter* LEONATO, HERO, *and* BEATRICE, *with a* Messenger

*Leonato.* I learn in this letter that Don Pedro of Arragon comes this night to Messina.

*Messenger.* He is very near by this; he was not three leagues off when I left him.

*Leonato.* How many gentlemen have you lost in this action?

*Messenger.* But few of any sort, and none of name.

*Leonato.* A victory is twice itself when the achiever brings home full numbers. I find here that Don Pedro hath bestowed much honour on a young Florentine called Claudio.

*Messenger.* Much deserved on his part and equally remembered by Don Pedro; he hath borne himself beyond the promise of his age, doing in the figure of a lamb the feats of a lion. He hath indeed better bettered expectation than you must expect of me to tell you how.

*Leonato.* He hath an uncle here in Messina will be very much glad of it.

*Messenger.* I have already delivered him letters and there appears much joy in him, even so much that joy could not show itself modest enough without a badge of bitterness.

*Leonato.* Did he break out into tears?

*Messenger.* In great measure.

*Leonato.* A kind overflow of kindness; there are no faces truer than those that are so washed. How much better is it to weep at joy than to joy at weeping!

*Beatrice.* I pray you, is Signior Montanto returned from the wars or no?

*Messenger.* I know none of that name, lady; there was none such in the army of any sort.

*Leonato.* What is he that you ask for, niece?

*Hero.* My cousin means Signior Benedick of Padua.

*Messenger.* O, he 's returned, and as pleasant as ever he was.

*Beatrice.* He set up his bills here in Messina and challenged Cupid at the flight; and my uncle's fool, reading the challenge, subscribed for Cupid and challenged him at the bird-bolt. I pray you, how many hath he killed and eaten in these wars? But how many hath he killed? for indeed I promised to eat all of his killing.

*Leonato.* Faith, niece, you tax Signior Benedick too much; but he' ll be meet with you, I doubt it not.

*Messenger.* He hath done good service, lady, in these wars.

*Beatrice.* You had musty victual, and he hath holp to eat it. He is a very valiant trencher-man; he hath an excellent stomach.

*Messenger.* And a good soldier too, lady.

*Beatrice.* And a good soldier to a lady; but what is he to a lord?

*Messenger.* A lord to a lord, a man to a man, stuffed with all honourable virtues.

*Beatrice.* It is so, indeed, he is no less than a stuffed man; but for the stuffing — well, we are all mortal.

*Leonato.* You must not, sir, mistake my niece. There is a kind of merry war betwixt Signior Benedick and her; they never meet but there 's a skirmish of wit between them.

*Beatrice.* Alas! he gets nothing by that. In our last conflict four of his five wits went halting off, and now is the whole man governed with one; so that if he have wit enough to keep himself warm, let him bear it for a difference between himself and his horse, for it is all the wealth that he hath left, to be known a reasonable creature. — Who is his companion now? He hath every month a new sworn brother.

*Messenger.* Is 't possible?

*Beatrice.* Very easily possible. He wears his faith but as the fashion of his hat; it ever changes with the next block.

*Messenger.* I see, lady, the gentleman is not in your books.

*Beatrice.* No; an he were, I would burn my study. But, I pray you, who is his companion? Is there no young squarer now that will make a voyage with him to the devil?

*Messenger.* He is most in the company of the right noble Claudio.

*Beatrice.* O Lord, he will hang upon him like a disease; he is sooner caught than the pestilence, and the taker runs presently mad. God help the noble Claudio! if he have caught the Benedick, it will cost him a thousand pound ere he be cured.

*Messenger.* I will hold friends with you, lady.

*Beatrice.* Do, good friend.

*Leonato.* You will never run mad, niece.

*Beatrice.* No, not till a hot January.

*Messenger.* Don Pedro is approached.

*Enter* Don Pedro, Don John, Claudio, Benedick, *and* Balthazar

*Don Pedro.* Good Signior Leonato, you are come to meet your trouble; the fashion of the world is to avoid cost, and you encounter it.

*Leonato.* Never came trouble to my house in the likeness of your grace; for trouble being gone, comfort should remain, but when you depart from me sorrow abides and happiness takes his leave. 102

*Don Pedro.* You embrace your charge too willingly. I think this is your daughter.

*Leonato.* Her mother hath many times told me so.

*Benedick.* Were you in doubt, sir, that you asked her?

*Leonato.* Signior Benedick, no; for then were you a child.

*Don Pedro.* You have it full, Benedick; we may guess by this what you are, being a man. Truly, the lady fathers herself. — Be happy, lady; for you are like an honourable father. 113

*Benedick.* If Signior Leonato be her father, she would not have his head on her shoulders for all Messina, as like him as she is.

*Beatrice.* I wonder that you will still be talking, Signior Benedick; nobody marks you.

*Benedick.* What, my dear Lady Disdain! are you yet living?

*Beatrice.* Is it possible disdain should die while she hath such meet food to feed it as Signior Benedick? Courtesy itself must convert to disdain, if you come in her presence.

*Benedick.* Then is courtesy a turncoat. But it is certain I am loved of all ladies, only you excepted; and I would I could find in my heart that I had not a hard heart, for truly, I love none.

*Beatrice.* A dear happiness to women; they would else have been troubled with a pernicious suitor. I thank God and my cold blood, I am of your humour for that; I had rather hear my dog bark at a crow than a man swear he loves me.

*Benedick.* God keep your ladyship still in that mind! so some gentleman or other shall scape a predestinate scratched face.

*Beatrice.* Scratching could not make it worse, an 't were such a face as yours were.

*Benedick.* Well, you are a rare parrot-teacher.

*Beatrice.* A bird of my tongue is better than a beast of yours.

*Benedick.* I would my horse had the speed of your tongue, and so good a continuer. But keep your way, o' God's name; I have done.

*Beatrice.* You always end with a jade's trick; I know you of old.

*Don Pedro.* That is the sum of all, Leonato. —

Signior Claudio and Signior Benedick, my dear friend Leonato hath invited you all. I tell him we shall stay here at the least a month, and he heartily prays some occasion may detain us longer. I dare swear he is no hypocrite but prays from his heart.

*Leonato.* If you swear, my lord, you shall not be forsworn. — [*To Don John*] Let me bid you welcome, my lord; being reconciled to the prince your brother, I owe you all duty.

*Don John.* I thank you; I am not of many words, but I thank you.

*Leonato.* Please it your grace lead on?

*Don Pedro.* Your hand, Leonato; we will go together.

[*Exeunt all except Benedick and Claudio.*

*Claudio.* Benedick, didst thou note the daughter of Signior Leonato?

*Benedick.* I noted her not, but I looked on her.

*Claudio.* Is she not a modest young lady?

*Benedick.* Do you question me, as an honest man should do, for my simple true judgment; or would you have me speak after my custom, as being a professed tyrant to their sex?

*Claudio.* No; I pray thee speak in sober judgment.

*Benedick.* Why, i' faith, methinks she 's too low for a high praise, too brown for a fair praise, and too little for a great praise; only this commendation I can afford her, that were she other than she is, she

were unhandsome, and being no other but as she is, I do not like her.

*Claudio.* Thou thinkest I am in sport; I pray thee tell me truly how thou likest her.

*Benedick.* Would you buy her, that you inquire after her? 181

*Claudio.* Can the world buy such a jewel?

*Benedick.* Yea, and a case to put it into. But speak you this with a sad brow? or do you play the flouting Jack, to tell us Cupid is a good hare-finder and Vulcan a rare carpenter? Come, in what key shall a man take you, to go in the song?

*Claudio.* In mine eye she is the sweetest lady that ever I looked on.

*Benedick.* I can see yet without spectacles, and I see no such matter; there 's her cousin, an she were not possessed with a fury, exceeds her as much in beauty as the first of May doth the last of December. But I hope you have no intent to turn husband, have you? 195

*Claudio.* I would scarce trust myself, though I had sworn the contrary, if Hero would be my wife.

*Benedick.* Is 't come to this, in faith? Hath not the world one man but he will wear his cap with suspicion? Shall I never see a bachelor of threescore again? Go to, i' faith; an thou wilt needs thrust thy neck into a yoke, wear the print of it and sigh away Sundays. — Look, Don Pedro is returned to seek you.

*Re-enter* DON PEDRO

*Don Pedro.* What secret hath held you here, that you follow not to Leonato's?

*Benedick.* I would your grace would constrain me to tell.

*Don Pedro.* I charge thee on thy allegiance.

*Benedick.* You hear, Count Claudio. I can be secret as a dumb man, I would have you think so; but, on my allegiance, mark you this, on my allegiance.—He is in love. With who? now that is your grace's part. Mark how short his answer is:—With Hero, Leonato's short daughter.

*Claudio.* If this were so, so were it uttered.

*Benedick.* Like the old tale, my lord: 'it is not so, nor 't was not so, but, indeed, God forbid it should be so.'

*Claudio.* If my passion change not shortly, God forbid it should be otherwise.

*Don Pedro.* Amen, if you love her, for the lady is very well worthy.

*Claudio.* You speak this to fetch me in, my lord.

*Don Pedro.* By my troth, I speak my thought.

*Claudio.* And, in faith, my lord, I spoke mine.

*Benedick.* And, by my two faiths and troths, my lord, I spoke mine.

*Claudio.* That I love her, I feel.

*Don Pedro.* That she is worthy, I know.

*Benedick.* That I neither feel how she should be

loved nor know how she should be worthy, is the opinion that fire cannot melt out of me; I will die in it at the stake.

*Don Pedro.* Thou wast ever an obstinate heretic in the despite of beauty.

*Claudio.* And never could maintain his part but in the force of his will.

*Benedick.* That a woman conceived me, I thank her; that she brought me up, I likewise give her most humble thanks; but that I will have a recheat winded in my forehead, or hang my bugle in an invisible baldrick, all women shall pardon me. Because I will not do them the wrong to mistrust any, I will do myself the right to trust none; and the fine is, for the which I may go the finer, I will live a bachelor.

*Don Pedro.* I shall see thee, ere I die, look pale with love.

*Benedick.* With anger, with sickness, or with hunger, my lord, not with love; prove that ever I lose more blood with love than I will get again with drinking, pick out mine eyes with a ballad-maker's pen and hang me up at the door of a brothel-house for the sign of blind Cupid.

*Don Pedro.* Well, if ever thou dost fall from this faith, thou wilt prove a notable argument.

*Benedick.* If I do, hang me in a bottle like a cat and shoot at me; and he that hits me, let him be clapped on the shoulder and called Adam.

*Don Pedro.* Well, as time shall try;
'In time the savage bull doth bear the yoke.'

*Benedick.* The savage bull may, but if ever the sensible Benedick bear it, pluck off the bull's horns and set them in my forehead; and let me be vilely painted, and in such great letters as they write 'Here is good horse to hire,' let them signify under my sign 'Here you may see Benedick the married man.'

*Claudio.* If this should ever happen, thou wouldst be horn-mad.

*Don Pedro.* Nay, if Cupid have not spent all his quiver in Venice, thou wilt quake for this shortly.

*Benedick.* I look for an earthquake too, then.

*Don Pedro.* Well, you will temporize with the hours. In the mean time, good Signior Benedick, repair to Leonato's; commend me to him and tell him I will not fail him at supper, for indeed he hath made great preparation.

*Benedick.* I have almost matter enough in me for such an embassage; and so I commit you —

*Claudio.* To the tuition of God; from my house, if I had it, —

*Don Pedro.* The sixth of July; your loving friend, Benedick.

*Benedick.* Nay, mock not, mock not. The body of your discourse is sometime guarded with fragments, and the guards are but slightly basted on neither. Ere you flout old ends any further, examine your conscience; and so I leave you. [*Exit.*

*Claudio.* My liege, your highness now may do me good.

*Don Pedro.* My love is thine to teach; teach it but how,
And thou shalt see how apt it is to learn
Any hard lesson that may do thee good.

*Claudio.* Hath Leonato any son, my lord?

*Don Pedro.* No child but Hero; she 's his only heir.
Dost thou affect her, Claudio?

*Claudio.* O, my lord,
When you went onward on this ended action,
I look'd upon her with a soldier's eye,
That lik'd, but had a rougher task in hand
Than to drive liking to the name of love;
But now I am return'd and that war-thoughts
Have left their places vacant, in their rooms
Come thronging soft and delicate desires,
All prompting me how fair young Hero is,
Saying I lik'd her ere I went to wars, —

*Don Pedro.* Thou wilt be like a lover presently
And tire the hearer with a book of words.
If thou dost love fair Hero, cherish it,
And I will break with her and with her father,
And thou shalt have her. Was 't not to this end
That thou began'st to twist so fine a story?

*Claudio.* How sweetly you do minister to love,
That know love's grief by his complexion!
But lest my liking might too sudden seem,
I would have salv'd it with a longer treatise.

*Don Pedro.* What need the bridge much broader than the flood?
The fairest grant is the necessity.
Look, what will serve is fit; 't is once, thou lovest,
And I will fit thee with the remedy.
I know we shall have revelling to-night;
I will assume thy part in some disguise
And tell fair Hero I am Claudio,
And in her bosom I 'll unclasp my heart
And take her hearing prisoner with the force
And strong encounter of my amorous tale.
Then after to her father will I break;
And the conclusion is, she shall be thine.
In practice let us put it presently. [*Exeunt.*

## Scene II. *A Room in Leonato's House*

*Enter* Leonato *and* Antonio, *meeting*

*Leonato.* How now, brother! Where is my cousin, your son? hath he provided this music?

*Antonio.* He is very busy about it. But, brother, I can tell you strange news that you yet dreamt not of.

*Leonato.* Are they good?

*Antonio.* As the event stamps them; but they have a good cover, they show well outward. The prince and Count Claudio, walking in a thick-pleached alley in mine orchard, were thus much overheard by a man of mine: the prince discovered to Claudio that

he loved my niece your daughter and meant to acknowledge it this night in a dance; and if he found her accordant, he meant to take the present time by the top and instantly break with you of it.

*Leonato.* Hath the fellow any wit that told you this?

*Antonio.* A good sharp fellow; I will send for him, and question him yourself. 19

*Leonato.* No, no; we will hold it as a dream till it appear itself; but I will acquaint my daughter withal, that she may be the better prepared for an answer, if peradventure this be true. Go you and tell her of it. — [*Enter attendants.*] Cousins, you know what you have to do. — O, I cry you mercy, friend; go you with me, and I will use your skill. — Good cousin, have a care this busy time. [*Exeunt.*

## Scene III. *The Same*

*Enter* Don John *and* Conrade

*Conrade.* What the good-year, my lord! why are you thus out of measure sad?

*Don John.* There is no measure in the occasion that breeds; therefore the sadness is without limit.

*Conrade.* You should hear reason.

*Don John.* And when I have heard it, what blessing brings it?

*Conrade.* If not a present remedy, at least a patient sufferance. 9

*Don John.* I wonder that thou, being, as thou sayest thou art, born under Saturn, goest about to apply a moral medicine to a mortifying mischief. I cannot hide what I am; I must be sad when I have cause and smile at no man's jests, eat when I have stomach and wait for no man's leisure, sleep when I am drowsy and tend on no man's business, laugh when I am merry and claw no man in his humour.

*Conrade.* Yea, but you must not make the full show of this till you may do it without controlment. You have of late stood out against your brother, and he hath ta'en you newly into his grace, where it is impossible you should take true root but by the fair weather that you make yourself; it is needful that you frame the season for your own harvest.

*Don John.* I had rather be a canker in a hedge than a rose in his grace, and it better fits my blood to be disdained of all than to fashion a carriage to rob love from any; in this, though I cannot be said to be a flattering honest man, it must not be denied but I am a plain-dealing villain. I am trusted with a muzzle and enfranchised with a clog; therefore I have decreed not to sing in my cage. If I had my mouth, I would bite; if I had my liberty, I would do my liking; in the mean time let me be that I am and seek not to alter me.

*Conrade.* Can you make no use of your discontent?

*Don John.* I make all use of it, for I use it only. — Who comes here? —

*Enter* Borachio

What news, Borachio? 39

*Borachio.* I came yonder from a great supper; the prince your brother is royally entertained by Leonato, and I can give you intelligence of an intended marriage.

*Don John.* Will it serve for any model to build mischief on? What is he for a fool that betroths himself to unquietness?

*Borachio.* Marry, it is your brother's right hand.

*Don John.* Who? the most exquisite Claudio?

*Borachio.* Even he.

*Don John.* A proper squire! And who, and who? which way looks he? 51

*Borachio.* Marry, on Hero, the daughter and heir of Leonato.

*Don John.* A very forward March-chick! How came you to this?

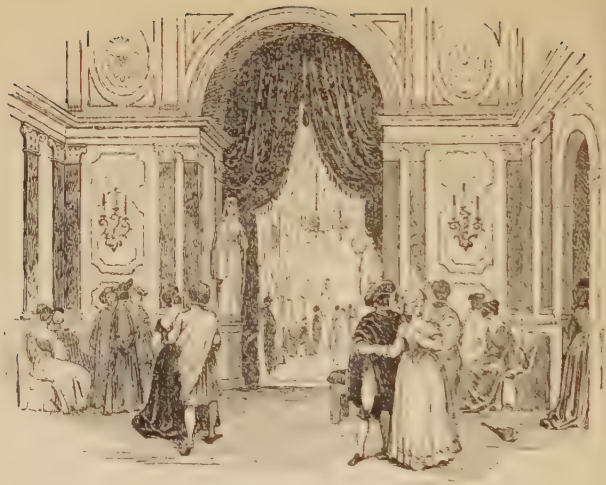
*Borachio.* Being entertained for a perfumer, as I was smoking a musty room, comes me the prince and Claudio, hand in hand, in sad conference; I whipt me behind the arras, and there heard it agreed upon that the prince should woo Hero for himself, and having obtained her, give her to Count Claudio.

*Don John.* Come, come, let us thither; this may prove food to my displeasure. That young start-up hath all the glory of my overthrow; if I can cross him any way, I bless myself every way. You are both sure, and will assist me? 66

*Conrade.* To the death, my lord.

*Don John.* Let us to the great supper; their cheer is the greater that I am subdued. Would the cook were of my mind! Shall we go prove what 's to be done?

*Borachio.* We 'll wait upon your lordship. [*Exeunt.*



THE MASQUERADE

## ACT II

### SCENE I. *A Hall in* LEONATO'S *House*

*Enter* LEONATO, ANTONIO, HERO, BEATRICE, *and others*

*Leonato.* Was not Count John here at supper?

*Antonio.* I saw him not.

*Beatrice.* How tartly that gentleman looks! I never can see him but I am heart-burned an hour after.

*Hero.* He is of a very melancholy disposition.

*Beatrice.* He were an excellent man that were made just in the midway between him and Bene-

dick; the one is too like an image and says nothing, and the other too like my lady's eldest son, evermore tattling.

*Leonato.* Then half Signior Benedick's tongue in Count John's mouth, and half Count John's melancholy in Signior Benedick's face, —

*Beatrice.* With a good leg and a good foot, uncle, and money enough in his purse, such a man would win any woman in the world — if he could get her good will.

*Leonato.* By my troth, niece, thou wilt never get thee a husband, if thou be so shrewd of thy tongue.

*Antonio.* In faith, she 's too curst.

*Beatrice.* Too curst is more than curst. I shall lessen God's sending that way; for it is said, 'God sends a curst cow short horns,' but to a cow too curst he sends none.

*Leonato.* So, by being too curst, God will send you no horns.

*Beatrice.* Just, if he send me no husband; for the which blessing I am at him upon my knees every morning and evening. Lord! I could not endure a husband with a beard on his face; I had rather lie in the woollen.

*Leonato.* You may light on a husband that hath no beard.

*Beatrice.* What should I do with him? dress him in my apparel and make him my waiting-gentlewoman? He that hath a beard is more than a youth,

and he that hath no beard is less than a man; and he that is more than a youth is not for me, and he that is less than a man I am not for him. Therefore I will even take sixpence in earnest of the bear-herd, and lead his apes into hell.

*Leonato.* Well, then, go you into hell?

*Beatrice.* No, but to the gate, and there will the devil meet me, like an old cuckold, with horns on his head, and say 'Get you to heaven, Beatrice, get you to heaven; here 's no place for you maids.' So deliver I up my apes, and away to Saint Peter for the heavens; he shows me where the bachelors sit, and there live we as merry as the day is long.

*Antonio.* [*To Hero*] Well, niece, I trust you will be ruled by your father.

*Beatrice.* Yes, faith; it is my cousin's duty to make curtsy and say 'Father, as it please you.'— But yet for all that, cousin, let him be a handsome fellow, or else make another curtsy and say 'Father, as it please me.'

*Leonato.* Well, niece, I hope to see you one day fitted with a husband.

*Beatrice.* Not till God make men of some other metal than earth. Would it not grieve a woman to be overmastered with a piece of valiant dust? to make an account of her life to a clod of wayward marl? No, uncle, I 'll none; Adam's sons are my brethren, and, truly, I hold it a sin to match in my kindred.

*Leonato.* Daughter, remember what I told you; if the prince do solicit you in that kind, you know your answer.

*Beatrice.* The fault will be in the music, cousin, if you be not wooed in good time; if the prince be too important, tell him there is measure in every thing, and so dance out the answer. For, hear me, Hero; wooing, wedding, and repenting is as a Scotch jig, a measure, and a cinque-pace. The first suit is hot and hasty, like a Scotch jig, and full as fantastical; the wedding, mannerly-modest, as a measure, full of state and ancientry; and then comes repentance, and with his bad legs falls into the cinque-pace faster and faster till he sink into his grave.

*Leonato.* Cousin, you apprehend passing shrewdly.

*Beatrice.* I have a good eye, uncle; I can see a church by daylight.

*Leonato.* The revellers are entering, brother; make good room. [*All put on their masks.*

*Enter* Don Pedro, Claudio, Benedick, Balthazar, Don John, Borachio, Margaret, Ursula, *and others, masked.*

*Don Pedro.* Lady, will you walk about with your friend?

*Hero.* So you walk softly and look sweetly and say nothing, I am yours for the walk; and especially when I walk away.

*Don Pedro.* With me in your company?

*Hero.* I may say so, when I please.

*Don Pedro.* And when please you to say so?

*Hero.* When I like your favour; for God defend the lute should be like the case!

*Don Pedro.* My visor is Philemon's roof; within the house is Jove.

*Hero.* Why, then, your visor should be thatch'd.

*Don Pedro.* Speak low, if you speak love. [*Drawing her aside.*

*Balthazar.* Well, I would you did like me.

*Margaret.* So would not I, for your own sake; for I have many ill qualities.

*Balthazar.* Which is one?

*Margaret.* I say my prayers aloud.

*Balthazar.* I love you the better; the hearers may cry Amen.

*Margaret.* God match me with a good dancer!

*Balthazar.* Amen.

*Margaret.* And God keep him out of my sight when the dance is done! Answer, clerk.

*Balthazar.* No more words; the clerk is answered.

*Ursula.* I know you well enough; you are Signior Antonio.

*Antonio.* At a word, I am not.

*Ursula.* I know you by the waggling of your head.

*Antonio.* To tell you true, I counterfeit him.

*Ursula.* You could never do him so ill-well unless you were the very man. Here 's his dry hand up and down; you are he, you are he.

*Antonio.* At a word, I am not.

*Ursula.* Come, come, do you think I do not know you by your excellent wit? can virtue hide itself? Go to, mum, you are he; graces will appear, and there 's an end.

*Beatrice.* Will you not tell me who told you so?

*Benedick.* No, you shall pardon me.

*Beatrice.* Nor will you not tell me who you are?

*Benedick.* Not now.

*Beatrice.* That I was disdainful, and that I had my good wit out of the 'Hundred Merry Tales';—well, this was Signior Benedick that said so.

*Benedick.* What 's he?

*Beatrice.* I am sure you know him well enough.

*Benedick.* Not I, believe me.

*Beatrice.* Did he never make you laugh?

*Benedick.* I pray you, what is he?

*Beatrice.* Why, he is the prince's jester, a very dull fool; only his gift is in devising impossible slanders. None but libertines delight in him, and the commendation is not in his wit, but in his villany; for he both pleases men and angers them, and then they laugh at him and beat him. I am sure he is in the fleet; I would he had boarded me.

*Benedick.* When I know the gentleman, I 'll tell him what you say.

*Beatrice.* Do, do; he 'll but break a comparison or two on me, which, peradventure not marked or not laughed at, strikes him into melancholy; and then

there 's a partridge wing saved, for the fool will eat no supper that night. — [*Music.*] We must follow the leaders.

*Benedick.* In every good thing.

*Beatrice.* Nay, if they lead to any ill, I will leave them at the next turning.

[*Dance. Then exeunt all except Don John, Borachio, and Claudio.*

*Don John.* Sure my brother is amorous on Hero and hath withdrawn her father to break with him about it. The ladies follow her and but one visor remains.

*Borachio.* And that is Claudio; I know him by his bearing.

*Don John.* Are not you Signior Benedick?

*Claudio.* You know me well; I am he.

*Don John.* Signior, you are very near my brother in his love. He is enamoured on Hero: I pray you, dissuade him from her; she is no equal for his birth. You may do the part of an honest man in it.

*Claudio.* How know you he loves her?

*Don John.* I heard him swear his affection.

*Borachio.* So did I too; and he swore he would marry her to-night.

*Don John.* Come, let us to the banquet.

[*Exeunt Don John and Borachio.*

*Claudio.* Thus answer I in name of Benedick,
But hear these ill news with the ears of Claudio.
'T is certain so; the prince wooes for himself.

Friendship is constant in all other things
Save in the office and affairs of love.
Therefore all hearts in love use their own tongues;
Let every eye negotiate for itself
And trust no agent, for beauty is a witch
Against whose charms faith melteth into blood.
This is an accident of hourly proof,
Which I mistrusted not. Farewell, therefore, Hero!

*Re-enter* BENEDICK

*Benedick.* Count Claudio?

*Claudio.* Yea, the same.

*Benedick.* Come, will you go with me?

*Claudio.* Whither?

*Benedick.* Even to the next willow, about your own business, county. What fashion will you wear the garland of? about your neck, like an usurer's chain? or under your arm, like a lieutenant's scarf? You must wear it one way, for the prince hath got your Hero.

*Claudio.* I wish him joy of her.

*Benedick.* Why, that 's spoken like an honest drovier; so they sell bullocks. But did you think the prince would have served you thus?

*Claudio.* I pray you, leave me.

*Benedick.* Ho! now you strike like the blind man; 't was the boy that stole your meat, and you 'll beat the post.

*Claudio.* If it will not be, I 'll leave you. [*Exit.*

*Benedick.* Alas, poor hurt fowl! now will he creep into sedges. But that my Lady Beatrice should know me, and not know me! The prince's fool! Ha? It may be I go under that title because I am merry. Yea, but so I am apt to do myself wrong; I am not so reputed. It is the base, though bitter disposition of Beatrice that puts the world into her person, and so gives me out. Well, I 'll be revenged as I may.

*Re-enter* Don Pedro

*Don Pedro.* Now, signior, where 's the count? did you see him? 209

*Benedick.* Troth, my lord, I have played the part of Lady Fame. I found him here as melancholy as a lodge in a warren. I told him, and I think I told him true, that your grace had got the good will of this young lady; and I offered him my company to a willow-tree, either to make him a garland, as being forsaken, or to bind him up a rod, as being worthy to be whipped.

*Don Pedro.* To be whipped! What 's his fault?

*Benedick.* The flat transgression of a school-boy, who, being overjoyed with finding a bird's nest, shows it his companion, and he steals it. 221

*Don Pedro.* Wilt thou make a trust a transgression? The transgression is in the stealer.

*Benedick.* Yet it had not been amiss the rod had been made, and the garland too; for the garland he might have worn himself, and the rod he might have

bestowed on you, who, as I take it, have stolen his bird's nest.

*Don Pedro.* I will but teach them to sing, and restore them to the owner.

*Benedick.* If their singing answer your saying, by my faith, you say honestly.

*Don Pedro.* The Lady Beatrice hath a quarrel to you; the gentleman that danced with her told her she is much wronged by you.

*Benedick.* O, she misused me past the endurance of a block! an oak but with one green leaf on it would have answered her; my very visor began to assume life and scold with her. She told me, not thinking I had been myself, that I was the prince's jester, that I was duller than a great thaw; huddling jest upon jest with such impossible conveyance upon me that I stood like a man at a mark, with a whole army shooting at me. She speaks poniards, and every word stabs. If her breath were as terrible as her terminations, there were no living near her; she would infect to the north star. I would not marry her, though she were endowed with all that Adam had left him before he transgressed; she would have made Hercules have turned spit, yea, and have cleft his club to make the fire too. Come, talk not of her; you shall find her the infernal Ate in good apparel. I would to God some scholar would conjure her; for certainly, while she is here, a man may live as quiet in hell as in a sanctuary; and people

sin upon purpose, because they would go thither; so, indeed, all disquiet, horror, and perturbation follows her.

*Don Pedro.* Look, here she comes.

*Enter* CLAUDIO, BEATRICE, HERO, *and* LEONATO

*Benedick.* Will your grace command me any service to the world's end? I will go on the slightest errand now to the Antipodes that you can devise to send me on; I will fetch you a toothpicker now from the furthest inch of Asia, bring you the length of Prester John's foot, fetch you a hair off the great Cham's beard, do you any embassage to the Pigmies, rather than hold three words' conference with this harpy. You have no employment for me?

*Don Pedro.* None, but to desire your good company.

*Benedick.* O God, sir, here 's a dish I love not; I cannot endure my Lady Tongue. [*Exit.*

*Don Pedro.* Come, lady, come; you have lost the heart of Signior Benedick.

*Beatrice.* Indeed, my lord, he lent it me awhile, and I gave him use for it, a double heart for his single one; marry, once before he won it of me with false dice, therefore your grace may well say I have lost it.

*Don Pedro.* You have put him down, lady, you have put him down.

*Beatrice.* So I would not he should do me, my

lord. I have brought Count Claudio, whom you sent me to seek.

*Don Pedro.* Why, how now, count! wherefore are you sad?

*Claudio.* Not sad, my lord.

*Don Pedro.* How then? sick?

*Claudio.* Neither, my lord.

*Beatrice.* The count is neither sad, nor sick, nor merry, nor well; but civil count, civil as an orange, and something of that jealous complexion.

*Don Pedro.* I' faith, lady, I think your blazon to be true; though, I 'll be sworn, if he be so, his conceit is false. — Here, Claudio, I have wooed in thy name, and fair Hero is won; I have broke with her father, and his good will obtained. Name the day of marriage, and God give the joy!

*Leonato.* Count, take of me my daughter, and with her my fortunes; his grace hath made the match, and all grace say Amen to it!

*Beatrice.* Speak, count, 't is your cue.

*Claudio.* Silence is the perfectest herald of joy; I were but little happy, if I could say how much. — Lady, as you are mine, I am yours; I give away myself for you, and dote upon the exchange.

*Beatrice.* Speak, cousin; or, if you cannot, stop his mouth with a kiss, and let not him speak neither.

*Don Pedro.* In faith, lady, you have a merry heart.

*Beatrice.* Yea, my lord; I thank it, poor fool, it

keeps on the windy side of care. My cousin tells him in his ear that he is in her heart.

*Claudio.* And so she doth, cousin.

*Beatrice.* Good Lord, for alliance! — Thus goes every one to the world but I, and I am sunburnt; I may sit in a corner and cry heigh-ho for a husband!

*Don Pedro.* Lady Beatrice, I will get you one.

*Beatrice.* I would rather have one of your father's getting. Hath your grace ne'er a brother like you? Your father got excellent husbands, if a maid could come by them. 322

*Don Pedro.* Will you have me, lady?

*Beatrice.* No, my lord, unless I might have another for working-days; your grace is too costly to wear every day. But, I beseech your grace, pardon me; I was born to speak all mirth and no matter.

*Don Pedro.* Your silence most offends me, and to be merry best becomes you; for, out of question, you were born in a merry hour. 330

*Beatrice.* No, sure, my lord, my mother cried; but then there was a star danced, and under that was I born. — Cousins, God give you joy!

*Leonato.* Niece, will you look to those things I told you of?

*Beatrice.* I cry you mercy, uncle. — By your grace's pardon. [*Exit.*

*Don Pedro.* By my troth, a pleasant-spirited lady.

*Leonato.* There's little of the melancholy element in her, my lord. She is never sad but when she

sleeps, and not ever sad then; for I have heard my daughter say, she hath often dreamed of unhappiness and waked herself with laughing.

*Don Pedro.* She cannot endure to hear tell of a husband.

*Leonato.* O, by no means; she mocks all her wooers out of suit.

*Don Pedro.* She were an excellent wife for Benedick.

*Leonato.* O Lord! my lord, if they were but a week married, they would talk themselves mad.

*Don Pedro.* County Claudio, when mean you to go to church?

*Claudio.* To-morrow, my lord; time goes on crutches till love have all his rites.

*Leonato.* Not till Monday, my dear son, which is hence a just seven-night; and a time too brief, too, to have all things answer my mind.

*Don Pedro.* Come, you shake the head at so long a breathing; but, I warrant thee, Claudio, the time shall not go dully by us. I will in the interim undertake one of Hercules' labours, which is to bring Signior Benedick and the Lady Beatrice into a mountain of affection the one with the other. I would fain have it a match, and I doubt not but to fashion it, if you three will but minister such assistance as I shall give you direction.

*Leonato.* My lord, I am for you, though it cost me ten nights' watchings.

*Claudio.* And I, my lord.

*Don Pedro.* And you too, gentle Hero?

*Hero.* I will do any modest office, my lord, to help my cousin to a good husband.

*Don Pedro.* And Benedick is not the unhopefullest husband that I know. Thus far can I praise him: he is of a noble strain, of approved valour and confirmed honesty. I will teach you how to humour your cousin, that she shall fall in love with Benedick; and I, with your two helps, will so practise on Benedick that, in despite of his quick wit and his queasy stomach, he shall fall in love with Beatrice. If we can do this, Cupid is no longer an archer; his glory shall be ours, for we are the only love-gods. Go in with me, and I will tell you my drift. [*Exeunt.*

## Scene II. *The Same*

*Enter* Don John *and* Borachio

*Don John.* It is so; the Count Claudio shall marry the daughter of Leonato.

*Borachio.* Yea, my lord; but I can cross it.

*Don John.* Any bar, any cross, any impediment will be medicinable to me; I am sick in displeasure to him, and whatsoever comes athwart his affection ranges evenly with mine. How canst thou cross this marriage?

*Borachio.* Not honestly, my lord, but so covertly that no dishonesty shall appear in me.

*Don John.* Show me briefly how.

*Borachio.* I think I told your lordship, a year since, how much I am in the favour of Margaret, the waiting-gentlewoman to Hero.

*Don John.* I remember.

*Borachio.* I can, at any unseasonable instant of the night, appoint her to look out at her lady's chamber-window.

*Don John.* What life is in that, to be the death of this marriage?

*Borachio.* The poison of that lies in you to temper. Go you to the prince your brother; spare not to tell him that he hath wronged his honour in marrying the renowned Claudio — whose estimation do you mightily hold up — to a contaminated stale, such a one as Hero.

*Don John.* What proof shall I make of that?

*Borachio.* Proof enough to misuse the prince, to vex Claudio, to undo Hero, and kill Leonato. Look you for any other issue?

*Don John.* Only to despite them, I will endeavour anything.

*Borachio.* Go, then; find me a meet hour to draw Don Pedro and the Count Claudio alone. Tell them that you know that Hero loves me; intend a kind of zeal both to the prince and Claudio, as — in love of your brother's honour, who hath made this match, and his friend's reputation, who is thus like to be cozened with the semblance of a maid — that you

have discovered thus. They will scarcely believe this without trial: offer them instances, which shall bear no less likelihood than to see me at her chamber-window, hear me call Margaret Hero, hear Margaret term me Claudio; and bring them to see this the very night before the intended wedding, — for in the mean time I will so fashion the matter that Hero shall be absent, — and there shall appear such seeming truth of Hero's disloyalty that jealousy shall be called assurance and all the preparation overthrown. 49

*Don John.* Grow this to what adverse issue it can, I will put it in practice. Be cunning in the working this, and thy fee is a thousand ducats.

*Borachio.* Be you constant in the accusation, and my cunning shall not shame me.

*Don John.* I will presently go learn their day of marriage. [*Exeunt.*

## Scene III. *Leonato's Orchard*

*Enter* Benedick

*Benedick.* Boy!

*Enter* Boy

*Boy.* Signior?

*Benedick.* In my chamber-window lies a book; bring it hither to me in the orchard.

*Boy.* I am here already, sir.

*Benedick.* I know that; but I would have thee hence, and here again. — [*Exit Boy.*] I do much

wonder that one man, seeing how much another man is a fool when he dedicates his behaviours to love, will, after he hath laughed at such shallow follies in others, become the argument of his own scorn by falling in love; and such a man is Claudio. I have known when there was no music with him but the drum and the fife, and now had he rather hear the tabor and the pipe; I have known when he would have walked ten mile afoot to see a good armour, and now will he lie ten nights awake, carving the fashion of a new doublet. He was wont to speak plain and to the purpose, like an honest man and a soldier, and now he is turned orthography; his words are a very fantastical banquet, just so many strange dishes. May I be so converted and see with these eyes? I cannot tell; I think not. I will not be sworn but love may transform me to an oyster; but I 'll take my oath on it, till he have made an oyster of me, he shall never make me such a fool. One woman is fair, yet I am well; another is wise, yet I am well; another virtuous, yet I am well; but till all graces be in one woman, one woman shall not come in my grace. Rich she shall be, that 's certain; wise, or I 'll none; virtuous, or I 'll never cheapen her; fair, or I 'll never look on her; mild, or come not near me; noble, or not I for an angel; of good discourse, an excellent musician, and her hair shall be of what colour it please God. — Ha! the prince and Monsieur Love! I will hide me in the arbour. [*Withdraws.*

*Enter* Don Pedro, Claudio, *and* Leonato, *followed by* Balthazar *and* Musicians

*Don Pedro.* Come, shall we hear this music?

*Claudio.* Yea, my good lord. How still the evening is,
As hush'd on purpose to grace harmony!

*Don Pedro.* See you where Benedick hath hid himself?

*Claudio.* O, very well, my lord; the music ended,
We 'll fit the kid-fox with a pennyworth.

*Don Pedro.* Come, Balthazar, we 'll hear that song again.

*Balthazar.* O, good my lord, tax not so bad a voice
To slander music any more than once.

*Don Pedro.* It is the witness still of excellency
To put a strange face on his own perfection.
I pray thee, sing, and let me woo no more.

*Balthazar.* Because you talk of wooing I will sing,
Since many a wooer doth commence his suit
To her he thinks not worthy; yet he wooes,
Yet will he swear he loves.

*Don Pedro.* Nay, pray thee, come;
Or, if thou wilt hold longer argument,
Do it in notes.

*Balthazar.* Note this before my notes:
There 's not a note of mine that 's worth the noting.

*Don Pedro.* Why, these are very crochets that he speaks;
Note, notes, forsooth, and nothing. [*Music.*

*Benedick.* Now, divine air! now is his soul ravished! Is it not strange that sheeps' guts should hale souls out of men's bodies? Well, a horn for my money, when all 's done.

The Song

Balthazar. *Sigh no more, ladies, sigh no more,*
*Men were deceivers ever,*
*One foot in sea and one on shore,*
*To one thing constant never;*
*Then sigh not so, but let them go,*
*And be you blithe and bonny,*
*Converting all your sounds of woe*
*Into Hey nonny, nonny.*

*Sing no more ditties, sing no moe,*
*Of dumps so dull and heavy;*
*The fraud of men was ever so,*
*Since summer first was leavy.*
*Then sigh not so,* etc.

*Don Pedro.* By my troth, a good song.

*Balthazar.* And an ill singer, my lord.

*Don Pedro.* Ha, no, no, faith; thou singest well enough for a shift.

*Benedick.* An he had been a dog that should have howled thus, they would have hanged him; and I pray God his bad voice bode no mischief! I had as lief have heard the night-raven, come what plague could have come after it.

*Don Pedro.* Yea, marry, dost thou hear, Balthazar? I pray thee, get us some excellent music; for to-morrow night we would have it at the Lady Hero's chamber-window.

*Balthazar.* The best I can, my lord.

*Don Pedro.* Do so; farewell. [*Exit Balthazar.*] Come hither, Leonato. What was it you told me of to-day, that your niece Beatrice was in love with Signior Benedick?

*Claudio.* O, ay — Stalk on, stalk on, the fowl sits. — I did never think that lady would have loved any man.

*Leonato.* No, nor I neither; but most wonderful that she should so dote on Signior Benedick, whom she hath in all outward behaviours seemed ever to abhor.

*Benedick.* Is 't possible? Sits the wind in that corner?

*Leonato.* By my troth, my lord, I cannot tell what to think of it but that she loves him with an enraged affection; it is past the infinite of thought.

*Don Pedro.* May be she doth but counterfeit.

*Claudio.* Faith, like enough.

*Leonato.* O God, counterfeit! There was never counterfeit of passion came so near the life of passion as she discovers it.

*Don Pedro.* Why, what effects of passion shows she?

*Claudio.* Bait the hook well; this fish will bite.

*Leonato.* What effects, my lord? She will sit you, you heard my daughter tell you how.

*Claudio.* She did, indeed.

*Don Pedro.* How, how, I pray you? You amaze me; I would have thought her spirit had been invincible against all assaults of affection.

*Leonato.* I would have sworn it had, my lord, especially against Benedick.

*Benedick.* I should think this a gull, but that the white-bearded fellow speaks it; knavery cannot, sure, hide himself in such reverence.

*Claudio.* He hath ta'en the infection; hold it up.

*Don Pedro.* Hath she made her affection known to Benedick?

*Leonato.* No, and swears she never will; that 's her torment.

*Claudio.* 'T is true, indeed; so your daughter says. 'Shall I,' says she, 'that have so oft encountered him with scorn, write to him that I love him?'

*Leonato.* This says she now when she is beginning to write to him, for she 'll be up twenty times a night, and there will she sit in her smock till she have writ a sheet of paper; my daughter tells us all.

*Claudio.* Now you talk of a sheet of paper, I remember a pretty jest your daughter told us of.

*Leonato.* O, when she had writ it and was reading it over, she found Benedick and Beatrice between the sheet?

*Claudio.* That.

*Leonato.* O, she tore the letter into a thousand halfpence; railed at herself, that she should be so im-

modest to write to one that she knew would flout her. 'I measure him,' says she, 'by my own spirit; for I should flout him, if he writ to me, yea, though I love him, I should.'

*Claudio.* Then down upon her knees she falls, weeps, sobs, beats her heart, tears her hair, prays, curses, 'O sweet Benedick! God give me patience!'

*Leonato.* She doth indeed, my daughter says so; and the ecstasy hath so much overborne her that my daughter is sometime afeard she will do a desperate outrage to herself; it is very true.

*Don Pedro.* It were good that Benedick knew of it by some other, if she will not discover it.

*Claudio.* To what end? He would but make a sport of it and torment the poor lady worse.

*Don Pedro.* An he should, it were an alms to hang him. She 's an excellent sweet lady; and, out of all suspicion, she is virtuous.

*Claudio.* And she is exceeding wise.

*Don Pedro.* In every thing but in loving Benedick.

*Leonato.* O, my lord, wisdom and blood combating in so tender a body, we have ten proofs to one that blood hath the victory. I am sorry for her, as I have just cause, being her uncle and her guardian.

*Don Pedro.* I would she had bestowed this dotage on me; I would have daffed all other respects and made her half myself. I pray you, tell Benedick of it, and hear what he will say.

*Leonato.* Were it good, think you?

*Claudio.* Hero thinks surely she will die; for she says she will die if he love her not, and she will die ere she make her love known, and she will die, if he woo her, rather than she will bate one breath of her accustomed crossness.

*Don Pedro.* She doth well; if she should make tender of her love, 't is very possible he 'll scorn it, for the man, as you know all, hath a contemptible spirit.

*Claudio.* He is a very proper man.

*Don Pedro.* He hath indeed a good outward happiness.

*Claudio.* Fore God, and, in my mind, very wise.

*Don Pedro.* He doth indeed show some sparks that are like wit.

*Leonato.* And I take him to be valiant.

*Don Pedro.* As Hector, I assure you; and in the managing of quarrels you may say he is wise, for either he avoids them with great discretion or undertakes them with a most Christian-like fear.

*Leonato.* If he do fear God, he must necessarily keep peace; if he break the peace, he ought to enter into a quarrel with fear and trembling.

*Don Pedro.* And so will he do; for the man doth fear God, howsoever it seems not in him by some large jests he will make. Well, I am sorry for your niece. Shall we go seek Benedick, and tell him of her love?

*Claudio.* Never tell him, my lord; let her wear it out with good counsel.

*Leonato.* Nay, that 's impossible; she may wear her heart out first.

*Don Pedro.* Well, we will hear further of it by your daughter; let it cool the while. I love Benedick well; and I could wish he would modestly examine himself, to see how much he is unworthy so good a lady.

*Leonato.* My lord, will you walk? dinner is ready.

*Claudio.* If he do not dote on her upon this, I will never trust my expectation.

*Don Pedro.* Let there be the same net spread for her; and that must your daughter and her gentlewoman carry. The sport will be, when they hold one an opinion of another's dotage, and no such matter; that 's the scene that I would see, which will be merely a dumb-show. Let us send her to call him in to dinner.

[*Exeunt Don Pedro, Claudio, and Leonato.*

*Benedick.* [*Coming forward*] This can be no trick; the conference was sadly borne. They have the truth of this from Hero. They seem to pity the lady; it seems her affections have their full bent. Love me! why, it must be requited. I hear how I am censured: they say I will bear myself proudly, if I perceive the love come from her; they say too that she will rather die than give any sign of affection. I did never think to marry. I must not seem proud;

happy are they that hear their detractions and can put them to mending. They say the lady is fair, — 't is a truth, I can bear them witness, — and virtuous, — 't is so, I cannot reprove it, — and wise, but for loving me; — by my troth, it is no addition to her wit, nor no great argument of her folly, for I will be horribly in love with her. I may chance have some odd quirks and remnants of wit broken on me, because I have railed so long against marriage; but doth not the appetite alter? a man loves the meat in his youth that he cannot endure in his age. Shall quips and sentences and these paper bullets of the brain awe a man from the career of his humour? No, the world must be peopled. When I said I would die a bachelor, I did not think I should live till I were married. — Here comes Beatrice. By this day, she 's a fair lady; I do spy some marks of love in her.

*Enter* Beatrice

*Beatrice.* Against my will I am sent to bid you come in to dinner.

*Benedick.* Fair Beatrice, I thank you for your pains.

*Beatrice.* I took no more pains for those thanks than you take pains to thank me; if it had been painful, I would not have come.

*Benedick.* You take pleasure then in the message?

*Beatrice.* Yea, just so much as you may take

upon a knife's point and choke a daw withal. — You have no stomach, signior; fare you well. [*Exit.*

*Benedick.* Ha! 'Against my will I am sent to bid you come in to dinner;' there 's a double meaning in that. 'I took no more pains for those thanks than you took pains to thank me;' that 's as much as to say, Any pains that I take for you is as easy as thanks. If I do not take pity of her, I am a villain; if I do not love her, I am a Jew. I will go get her picture. [*Exit.*

ANCIENT WATCHMEN

## ACT III

### SCENE I. *Leonato's Orchard*

*Enter* HERO, MARGARET, *and* URSULA

*Hero.* Good Margaret, run thee to the parlour;
There shalt thou find my cousin Beatrice
Proposing with the prince and Claudio.
Whisper her ear and tell her, I and Ursula
Walk in the orchard and our whole discourse
Is all of her; say that thou overheard'st us,
And bid her steal into the pleached bower,
Where honeysuckles, ripen'd by the sun,
Forbid the sun to enter, like favourites,
Made proud by princes, that advance their pride

Against that power that bred it. There will she hide her,
To listen our propose. This is thy office;
Bear thee well in it, and leave us alone.

*Margaret.* I 'll make her come, I warrant you, presently. [*Exit.*

*Hero.* Now, Ursula, when Beatrice doth come,
As we do trace this alley up and down,
Our talk must only be of Benedick.
When I do name him let it be thy part
To praise him more than ever man did merit;
My talk to thee must be how Benedick
Is sick in love with Beatrice. Of this matter
Is little Cupid's crafty arrow made
That only wounds by hearsay. —

*Enter* BEATRICE, *behind*

Now begin;
For look where Beatrice, like a lapwing, runs
Close by the ground, to hear our conference.

*Ursula.* The pleasant'st angling is to see the fish
Cut with her golden oars the silver stream
And greedily devour the treacherous bait;
So angle we for Beatrice, who even now
Is couched in the woodbine coverture.
Fear you not my part of the dialogue.

*Hero.* Then go we near her, that her ear lose nothing
Of the false sweet bait that we lay for it. —

[*Approaching the bower.*

No, truly, Ursula, she is too disdainful.
I know her spirits are as coy and wild
As haggards of the rock.
*Ursula.* But are you sure
That Benedick loves Beatrice so entirely?
*Hero.* So says the prince and my new-trothed lord.
*Ursula.* And did they bid you tell her of it, madam?
*Hero.* They did entreat me to acquaint her of it;
But I persuaded them, if they lov'd Benedick,
To wish him wrestle with affection
And never to let Beatrice know of it.
*Ursula.* Why did you so? Doth not the gentleman
Deserve as full as fortunate a bed
As ever Beatrice shall couch upon?
*Hero.* O god of love! I know he doth deserve
As much as may be yielded to a man;
But Nature never fram'd a woman's heart
Of prouder stuff than that of Beatrice.
Disdain and scorn ride sparkling in her eyes,
Misprising what they look on, and her wit
Values itself so highly that to her
All matter else seems weak; she cannot love,
Nor take no shape nor project of affection,
She is so self-endeared.
*Ursula.* Sure, I think so;
And therefore certainly it were not good
She knew his love, lest she make sport at it.
*Hero.* Why, you speak truth. I never yet saw man,
How wise, how noble, young, how rarely featur'd,

But she would spell him backward. If fair-fac'd,
She would swear the gentleman should be her sister;
If black, why, Nature, drawing of an antic,
Made a foul blot; if tall, a lance ill-headed;
If low, an agate very vilely cut;
If speaking, why, a vane blown with all winds;
If silent, why, a block moved with none.
So turns she every man the wrong side out,
And never gives to truth and virtue that
Which simpleness and merit purchaseth.

*Ursula.* Sure, sure, such carping is not commendable.

*Hero.* No, not to be so odd and from all fashions
As Beatrice is, cannot be commendable;
But who dare tell her so? If I should speak,
She would mock me into air; O, she would laugh me
Out of myself, press me to death with wit.
Therefore let Benedick, like cover'd fire,
Consume away in sighs, waste inwardly;
It were a better death than die with mocks,
Which is as bad as die with tickling.

*Ursula.* Yet tell her of it; hear what she will say.

*Hero.* No; rather I will go to Benedick
And counsel him to fight against his passion.
And, truly, I 'll devise some honest slanders
To stain my cousin with; one doth not know
How much an ill word may empoison liking.

*Ursula.* O, do not do your cousin such a wrong.
She cannot be so much without true judgment —

Having so swift and excellent a wit
As she is priz'd to have — as to refuse
So rare a gentleman as Signior Benedick.
*Hero.* He is the only man of Italy,
Always excepted my dear Claudio.
*Ursula.* I pray you, be not angry with me, madam,
Speaking my fancy; Signior Benedick,
For shape, for bearing, argument, and valour,
Goes foremost in report through Italy.
*Hero.* Indeed, he hath an excellent good name.
*Ursula.* His excellence did earn it, ere he had it.
When are you married, madam?
*Hero.* Why, every day, to-morrow. Come, go in;
I 'll show thee some attires, and have thy counsel
Which is the best to furnish me to-morrow.
*Ursula.* She 's lim'd, I warrant you; we have caught her, madam.
*Hero.* If it prove so, then loving goes by haps;
Some Cupid kills with arrows, some with traps.
[*Exeunt Hero and Ursula.*
*Beatrice.* [*Coming forward*] What fire is in mine ears? Can this be true?
Stand I condemn'd for pride and scorn so much?
Contempt, farewell! and maiden pride, adieu!
No glory lives behind the back of such.
And, Benedick, love on; I will requite thee,
Taming my wild heart to thy loving hand.
If thou dost love, my kindness shall incite thee
To bind our loves up in a holy band;

For others say thou dost deserve, and I
Believe it better than reportingly. [*Exit.*

SCENE II. *A Room in Leonato's House*

*Enter* DON PEDRO, CLAUDIO, BENEDICK, *and* LEONATO

*Don Pedro.* I do but stay till your marriage be consummate, and then go I toward Arragon.

*Claudio.* I 'll bring you thither, my lord, if you 'll vouchsafe me.

*Don Pedro.* Nay, that would be as great a soil in the new gloss of your marriage as to show a child his new coat and forbid him to wear it. I will only be bold with Benedick for his company, for, from the crown of his head to the sole of his foot, he is all mirth; he hath twice or thrice cut Cupid's bow-string, and the little hangman dare not shoot at him. He hath a heart as sound as a bell and his tongue is the clapper, for what his heart thinks his tongue speaks.

*Benedick.* Gallants, I am not as I have been.

*Leonato.* So say I; methinks you are sadder.

*Claudio.* I hope he be in love.

*Don Pedro.* Hang him, truant! there 's no true drop of blood in him to be truly touched with love; if he be sad, he wants money.

*Benedick.* I have the toothache.

*Don Pedro.* Draw it.

*Benedick.* Hang it!

*Claudio.* You must hang it first, and draw it afterwards.

*Don Pedro.* What! sigh for the toothache?

*Leonato.* Where is but a humour or a worm?

*Benedick.* Well, every one can master a grief but he that has it.

*Claudio.* Yet say I, he is in love.

*Don Pedro.* There is no appearance of fancy in him, unless it be a fancy that he hath to strange disguises; as to be a Dutchman to-day, a Frenchman to-morrow, or in the shape of two countries at once, as a German from the waist downward, all slops, and a Spaniard from the hip upward, no doublet. Unless he have a fancy to this foolery, as it appears he hath, he is no fool for fancy, as you would have it appear he is.

*Claudio.* If he be not in love with some woman, there is no believing old signs: he brushes his hat o' mornings; what should that bode?

*Don Pedro.* Hath any man seen him at the barber's?

*Claudio.* No, but the barber's man hath been seen with him, and the old ornament of his cheek hath already stuffed tennis-balls.

*Leonato.* Indeed, he looks younger than he did, by the loss of a beard.

*Don Pedro.* Nay, he rubs himself with civet; can you smell him out by that?

*Claudio.* That 's as much as to say, the sweet youth 's in love.

*Don Pedro.* The greatest note of it is his melancholy.

*Claudio.* And when was he wont to wash his face?

*Don Pedro.* Yea, or to paint himself? for the which, I hear what they say of him.

*Claudio.* Nay, but his jesting spirit, which is now crept into a lute-string and now governed by stops.

*Don Pedro.* Indeed, that tells a heavy tale for him; conclude, conclude he is in love.

*Claudio.* Nay, but I know who loves him.

*Don Pedro.* That would I know too; I warrant, one that knows him not.

*Claudio.* Yes, and his ill conditions, and, in despite of all, dies for him.

*Don Pedro.* She shall be buried with her face upwards.

*Benedick.* Yet is this no charm for the toothache. — Old signior, walk aside with me; I have studied eight or nine wise words to speak to you which these hobby-horses must not hear. [*Exeunt Benedick and Leonato.*

*Don Pedro.* For my life, to break with him about Beatrice.

*Claudio.* 'T is even so. Hero and Margaret have by this played their parts with Beatrice; and then the two bears will not bite one another when they meet.

*Enter* Don John

*Don John.* My lord and brother, God save you!

*Don Pedro.* Good den, brother.

*Don John.* If your leisure served, I would speak with you.

*Don Pedro.* In private?

*Don John.* If it please you; yet Count Claudio may hear, for what I would speak of concerns him.

*Don Pedro.* What 's the matter?

*Don John.* [*To Claudio*] Means your lordship to be married to-morrow?

*Don Pedro.* You know he does.

*Don John.* I know not that, when he knows what I know.

*Claudio.* If there be any impediment, I pray you discover it.

*Don John.* You may think I love you not; let that appear hereafter, and aim better at me by that I now will manifest. For my brother, I think he holds you well, and in dearness of heart hath holp to effect your ensuing marriage,—surely suit ill spent and labour ill bestowed.

*Don Pedro.* Why, what 's the matter?

*Don John.* I came hither to tell you; and, circumstances shortened, for she has been too long a talking of, the lady is disloyal.

*Claudio.* Who? Hero?

*Don John.* Even she; Leonato's Hero, your Hero, every man's Hero.

*Claudio.* Disloyal?

*Don John.* The word is too good to paint out her wickedness; I could say she were worse. Think you of a worse title, and I will fit her to it. Wonder not till further warrant; go but with me to-night, you shall

see her chamber-window entered, even the night before her wedding-day. If you love her then, to-morrow wed her; but it would better fit your honour to change your mind.

*Claudio.* May this be so?

*Don Pedro.* I will not think it.

*Don John.* If you dare not trust that you see, confess not that you know. If you will follow me, I will show you enough; and when you have seen more and heard more, proceed accordingly.

*Claudio.* If I see any thing to-night why I should not marry her to-morrow, in the congregation where I should wed, there will I shame her.

*Don Pedro.* And, as I wooed for thee to obtain her, I will join with thee to disgrace her.

*Don John.* I will disparage her no farther till you are my witnesses; bear it coldly but till midnight, and let the issue show itself.

*Don Pedro.* O day untowardly turned!

*Claudio.* O mischief strangely thwarting!

*Don John.* O plague right well prevented! so will you say when you have seen the sequel. [*Exeunt.*

## Scene III. *A Street*

*Enter* Dogberry *and* Verges *with the* Watch

*Dogberry.* Are you good men and true?

*Verges.* Yea, or else it were pity but they should suffer salvation, body and soul.

*Dogberry.* Nay, that were a punishment too good for them if they should have any allegiance in them, being chosen for the prince's watch.

*Verges.* Well, give them their charge, neighbour Dogberry.

*Dogberry.* First, who think you the most desartless man to be constable?

1 *Watch.* Hugh Oatcake, sir, or George Seacole, for they can write and read.

*Dogberry.* Come hither, neighbour Seacole. God hath blessed you with a good name; to be a well-favoured man is the gift of fortune, but to write and read comes by nature.

2 *Watch.* Both which, master constable, —

*Dogberry.* You have; I knew it would be your answer. Well, for your favour, sir, why, give God thanks and make no boast of it; and for your writing and reading, let that appear when there is no need of such vanity. You are thought here to be the most senseless and fit man for the constable of the watch; therefore bear you the lantern. This is your charge: you shall comprehend all vagrom men; you are to bid any man stand, in the prince's name.

2 *Watch.* How if a' will not stand?

*Dogberry.* Why, then, take no note of him, but let him go; and presently call the rest of the watch together and thank God you are rid of a knave.

*Verges.* If he will not stand when he is bidden, he is none of the prince's subjects.

*Dogberry.* True, and they are to meddle with none but the prince's subjects. — You shall also make no noise in the streets; for, for the watch to babble and to talk is most tolerable and not to be endured.

*Watch.* We will rather sleep than talk; we know what belongs to a watch.

*Dogberry.* Why, you speak like an ancient and most quiet watchman, for I cannot see how sleeping should offend; only have a care that your bills be not stolen. Well, you are to call at all the ale-houses, and bid them that are drunk get them to bed.

*Watch.* How if they will not?

*Dogberry.* Why, then, let them alone till they are sober; if they make you not then the better answer, you may say they are not the men you took them for.

*Watch.* Well, sir.

*Dogberry.* If you meet a thief, you may suspect him, by virtue of your office, to be no true man; and, for such kind of men, the less you meddle or make with them, why, the more is for your honesty.

*Watch.* If we know him to be a thief, shall we not lay hands on him?

*Dogberry.* Truly, by your office, you may; but I think they that touch pitch will be defiled. The most peaceable way for you, if you do take a thief, is to let him show himself what he is and steal out of your company.

*Verges.* You have been always called a merciful man, partner.

*Dogberry.* Truly, I would not hang a dog by my will, much more a man who hath any honesty in him.

*Verges.* If you hear a child cry in the night, you must call to the nurse and bid her still it.

*Watch.* How if the nurse be asleep and will not hear us?

*Dogberry.* Why, then, depart in peace, and let the child wake her with crying; for the ewe that will not hear her lamb when it baes will never answer a calf when he bleats. 71

*Verges.* 'T is very true.

*Dogberry.* This is the end of the charge: you, constable, are to present the prince's own person; if you meet the prince in the night, you may stay him.

*Verges.* Nay, by 'r lady, that I think a' cannot.

*Dogberry.* Five shillings to one on 't, with any man that knows the statues, he may stay him: marry, not without the prince be willing; for, indeed, the watch ought to offend no man, and it is an offence to stay a man against his will. 81

*Verges.* By 'r lady, I think it be so.

*Dogberry.* Ha, ha, ha! Well, masters, good night. An there be any matter of weight chances, call up me. Keep your fellows' counsels and your own; and good night. — Come, neighbour.

*Watch.* Well, masters, we hear our charge; let us go sit here upon the church-bench till two, and then all to bed. 89

*Dogberry.* One word more, honest neighbours. I

pray you, watch about Signior Leonato's door; for, the wedding being there to-morrow, there is a great coil to-night. Adieu; be vigitant, I beseech you.

[*Exeunt Dogberry and Verges.*

*Enter* BORACHIO *and* CONRADE

*Borachio.* What, Conrade!

*Watch.* [*Aside*] Peace! stir not.

*Borachio.* Conrade, I say!

*Conrade.* Here, man; I am at thy elbow.

*Borachio.* Mass, and my elbow itched; I thought there would a scab follow.

*Conrade.* I will owe thee an answer for that; and now forward with thy tale.

*Borachio.* Stand thee close, then, under this pent-house, for it drizzles rain; and I will, like a true drunkard, utter all to thee.

*Watch.* [*Aside*] Some treason, masters; yet stand close.

*Borachio.* Therefore know I have earned of Don John a thousand ducats.

*Conrade.* Is it possible that any villany should be so dear?

*Borachio.* Thou shouldst rather ask if it were possible any villany should be so rich; for when rich villains have need of poor ones, poor ones may make what price they will.

*Conrade.* I wonder at it.

*Borachio.* That shows thou art unconfirmed. Thou

knowest that the fashion of a doublet, or a hat, or a cloak, is nothing to a man.

*Conrade.* Yes, it is apparel.

*Borachio.* I mean, the fashion.

*Conrade.* Yes, the fashion is the fashion.

*Borachio.* Tush! I may as well say the fool 's the fool. But seest thou not what a deformed thief this fashion is?

*Watch.* [*Aside*] I know that Deformed, a' has been a vile thief this seven year; a' goes up and down like a gentleman. I remember his name.

*Borachio.* Didst thou not hear somebody?

*Conrade.* No; 't was the vane on the house.

*Borachio.* Seest thou not, I say, what a deformed thief this fashion is? how giddily a' turns about all the hot bloods between fourteen and five-and-thirty? sometime fashioning them like Pharaoh's soldiers in the reechy painting, sometime like god Bel's priests in the old church-window, sometime like the shaven Hercules in the smirched worm-eaten tapestry.

*Conrade.* All this I see; and I see that the fashion wears out more apparel than the man. But art not thou thyself giddy with the fashion too, that thou hast shifted out of thy tale into telling me of the fashion?

*Borachio.* Not so, neither; but know that I have to-night wooed Margaret, the Lady Hero's gentlewoman, by the name of Hero. She leans me out at her mistress's chamber-window, bids me a thousand

times good night, — I tell this tale vilely; — I should first tell thee how the prince, Claudio, and my master, planted and placed and possessed by my master Don John, saw afar off in the orchard this amiable encounter.

*Conrade.* And thought they Margaret was Hero?

*Borachio.* Two of them did, the prince and Claudio, but the devil my master knew she was Margaret; and partly by his oaths, which first possessed them, partly by the dark night, which did deceive them, but chiefly by my villany, which did confirm any slander that Don John had made, away went Claudio enraged, swore he would meet her, as he was appointed, next morning at the temple, and there, before the whole congregation, shame her with what he saw o'er-night and send her home again without a husband.

1 *Watch.* We charge you, in the prince's name, stand!

2 *Watch.* Call up the right master constable. We have here recovered the most dangerous piece of lechery that ever was known in the commonwealth.

1 *Watch.* And one Deformed is one of them. I know him; a' wears a lock.

*Conrade.* Masters, masters, —

2 *Watch.* You 'll be made bring Deformed forth, I warrant you.

*Conrade.* Masters, —

1 *Watch.* Never speak; we charge you, let us obey you to go with us.

*Borachio.* We are like to prove a goodly commodity, being taken up of these men's bills.

*Conrade.* A commodity in question, I warrant you. — Come, we 'll obey you. [*Exeunt.*

## Scene IV. *Hero's Apartment*

*Enter* Hero, Margaret, *and* Ursula

*Hero.* Good Ursula, wake my cousin Beatrice, and desire her to rise.

*Ursula.* I will, lady.

*Hero.* And bid her come hither.

*Ursula.* Well. [*Exit.*

*Margaret.* Troth, I think your other rabato were better.

*Hero.* No, pray thee, good Meg, I 'll wear this.

*Margaret.* By my troth, 's not so good; and I warrant your cousin will say so. 10

*Hero.* My cousin 's a fool, and thou art another; I 'll wear none but this.

*Margaret.* I like the new tire within excellently, if the hair were a thought browner; and your gown 's a most rare fashion, i' faith. I saw the Duchess of Milan's gown that they praise so.

*Hero.* O, that exceeds, they say!

*Margaret.* By my troth, 's but a night-gown in respect of yours: cloth o' gold, and cuts, and laced with silver, set with pearls, down sleeves, side

sleeves, and skirts round, underborne with a bluish tinsel; but for a fine, quaint, graceful, and excellent fashion, yours is worth ten on 't.

*Hero.* God give me joy to wear it! for my heart is exceeding heavy.

*Margaret.* 'T will be heavier soon by the weight of a man.

*Hero.* Fie upon thee! art not ashamed?

*Margaret.* Of what, lady? of speaking honourably? Is not marriage honourable in a beggar? Is not your lord honourable without marriage? I think you would have me say, 'saving your reverence, a husband.' An bad thinking do not wrest true speaking, I'll offend nobody; is there any harm in 'the heavier for a husband'? None, I think, an it be the right husband and the right wife; otherwise 't is light, and not heavy. Ask my Lady Beatrice else; here she comes.

*Enter* Beatrice

*Hero.* Good morrow, coz.

*Beatrice.* Good morrow, sweet Hero.

*Hero.* Why, how now? do you speak in the sick tune?

*Beatrice.* I am out of all other tune, methinks.

*Margaret.* Clap 's into 'Light o' love'; that goes without a burden. Do you sing it, and I 'll dance it.

*Beatrice.* Yea, light o' love, with your heels! then, if your husband have stables enough, you 'll see he shall lack no barns.

*Margaret.* O illegitimate construction! I scorn that with my heels.

*Beatrice.* 'T is almost five o'clock, cousin; 't is time you were ready. By my troth, I am exceeding ill; heigh-ho!

*Margaret.* For a hawk, a horse, or a husband?

*Beatrice.* For the letter that begins them all, H.

*Margaret.* Well, an you be not turned Turk, there 's no more sailing by the star.

*Beatrice.* What means the fool, trow?

*Margaret.* Nothing I; but God send every one their heart's desire!

*Hero.* These gloves the count sent me; they are an excellent perfume.

*Beatrice.* I am stuffed, cousin; I cannot smell.

*Margaret.* A maid, and stuffed! there 's goodly catching of cold.

*Beatrice.* O, God help me! God help me! how long have you professed apprehension?

*Margaret.* Ever since you left it. Doth not my wit become me rarely?

*Beatrice.* It is not seen enough, you should wear it in your cap. By my troth, I am sick.

*Margaret.* Get you some of this distilled Carduus Benedictus, and lay it to your heart; it is the only thing for a qualm.

*Hero.* There thou prickest her with a thistle.

*Beatrice.* Benedictus! why Benedictus? you have some moral in this Benedictus.

*Margaret.* Moral! no, by my troth, I have no moral meaning; I meant plain holy-thistle. You may think perchance that I think you are in love; nay, by 'r lady, I am not such a fool to think what I list, nor I list not to think what I can, nor indeed I cannot think, if I would think my heart out of thinking, that you are in love, or that you will be in love, or that you can be in love. Yet Benedick was such another, and now is he become a man. He swore he would never marry, and yet now, in despite of his heart, he eats his meat without grudging; and how you may be converted I know not, but methinks you look with your eyes as other women do. 89

*Beatrice.* What pace is this that thy tongue keeps?

*Margaret.* Not a false gallop.

*Enter* URSULA

*Ursula.* Madam, withdraw; the prince, the count, Signior Benedick, Don John, and all the gallants of the town, are come to fetch you to church.

*Hero.* Help to dress me, good coz, good Meg, good Ursula. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE V. *Another Room in Leonato's House*

*Enter* LEONATO, *with* DOGBERRY *and* VERGES

*Leonato.* What would you with me, honest neighbour?

*Dogberry.* Marry, sir, I would have some confidence with you that decerns you nearly.

*Leonato.* Brief, I pray you; for you see it is a busy time with me.

*Dogberry.* Marry, this it is, sir.

*Verges.* Yes, in truth it is, sir.

*Leonato.* What is it, my good friends? 9

*Dogberry.* Goodman Verges, sir, speaks a little off the matter; an old man, sir, and his wits are not so blunt as, God help, I would desire they were, but, in faith, honest as the skin between his brows.

*Verges.* Yes, I thank God I am as honest as any man living that is an old man and no honester than I.

*Dogberry.* Comparisons are odorous; palabras, neighbour Verges.

*Leonato.* Neighbours, you are tedious. 19

*Dogberry.* It pleases your worship to say so, but we are the poor duke's officers; but truly, for mine own part, if I were as tedious as a king, I could find in my heart to bestow it all of your worship.

*Leonato.* All thy tediousness on me, ah?

*Dogberry.* Yea, an 't were a thousand pound more than 't is, for I hear as good exclamation on your worship as of any man in the city; and though I be but a poor man, I am glad to hear it.

*Verges.* And so am I. 29

*Leonato.* I would fain know what you have to say.

*Verges.* Marry, sir, our watch to-night, excepting your worship's presence, ha' ta'en a couple of as arrant knaves as any in Messina,

*Dogberry.* A good old man, sir, he will be talking; as they say, when the age is in, the wit is out. God help us! it is a world to see. — Well said, i' faith, neighbour Verges. Well, God 's a good man; an two men ride of a horse, one must ride behind. — An honest soul, i' faith, sir; by my troth he is, as ever broke bread; but God is to be worshipped; all men are not alike; alas, good neighbour! 41

*Leonato.* Indeed, neighbour, he comes too short of you.

*Dogberry.* Gifts that God gives.

*Leonato.* I must leave you.

*Dogberry.* One word, sir: our watch, sir, have indeed comprehended two auspicious persons, and we would have them this morning examined before your worship. 49

*Leonato.* Take their examination yourself and bring it me; I am now in great haste, as it may appear unto you.

*Dogberry.* It shall be suffigance.

*Leonato.* Drink some wine ere you go. Fare you well.

*Enter a* Messenger

*Messenger.* My lord, they stay for you to give your daughter to her husband.

*Leonato.* I 'll wait upon them; I am ready.

[*Exeunt Leonato and Messenger.*

*Dogberry.* Go, good partner, go, get you to Fran-

cis Seacole, bid him bring his pen and inkhorn to the gaol; we are now to examine those men. 61

*Verges.* And we must do it wisely.

*Dogberry.* We will spare for no wit, I warrant you; here 's that shall drive some of them to a non-come. Only get the learned writer to set down our excommunication, and meet me at the gaol. [*Exeunt.*

INTERIOR OF CATHEDRAL, MESSINA

## ACT IV

### SCENE I. *A Church*

*Enter* DON PEDRO, DON JOHN, LEONATO, FRIAR FRANCIS, CLAUDIO, BENEDICK, HERO, BEATRICE, *and* Attendants.

*Leonato.* Come, Friar Francis, be brief; only to the plain form of marriage, and you shall recount their particular duties afterwards.

*Friar Francis.* You come hither, my lord, to marry this lady.

*Claudio.* No.

*Leonato.* To be married to her. — Friar, you come to marry her.

*Friar Francis.* Lady, you come hither to be married to this count.

*Hero.* I do.

*Friar Francis.* If either of you know any inward impediment why you should not be conjoined, I charge you, on your souls, to utter it.

*Claudio.* Know you any, Hero?

*Hero.* None, my lord.

*Friar Francis.* Know you any, count?

*Leonato.* I dare make his answer, none.

*Claudio.* O, what men dare do! what men may do! what men daily do, not knowing what they do!

*Benedick.* How now! interjections? Why, then, some be of laughing, as, ah, ha, he!

*Claudio.* Stand thee by, friar. — Father, by your leave:

Will you with free and unconstrained soul
Give me this maid, your daughter?

*Leonato.* As freely, son, as God did give her me.

*Claudio.* And what have I to give you back, whose worth
May counterpoise this rich and precious gift?

*Don Pedro.* Nothing, unless you render her again.

*Claudio.* Sweet prince, you learn me noble thankfulness.
There, Leonato, take her back again.
Give not this rotten orange to your friend;
She 's but the sign and semblance of her honour.
Behold how like a maid she blushes here!
O, what authority and show of truth
Can cunning sin cover itself withal!
Comes not that blood as modest evidence
To witness simple virtue? Would you not swear,
All you that see her, that she were a maid,
By these exterior shows? But she is none.
She knows the heat of a luxurious bed;
Her blush is guiltiness, not modesty.
*Leonato.* What do you mean, my lord?
*Claudio.* Not to be married,
Not to knit my soul to an approved wanton.
*Leonato.* Dear my lord, if you, in your own proof,
Have vanquish'd the resistance of her youth,
And made defeat of her virginity, —
*Claudio.* I know what you would say. No, Leonato,
I never tempted her with word too large,
But, as a brother to his sister, show'd
Bashful sincerity and comely love.
*Hero.* And seem'd I ever otherwise to you?
*Claudio.* Out on thee! Seeming! I will write against it:
You seem to me as Dian in her orb,
As chaste as is the bud ere it be blown;

But you are more intemperate in your blood
Than Venus, or those pamper'd animals
That rage in savage sensuality.
*Hero.* Is my lord well, that he doth speak so wide?
*Leonato.* Sweet prince, why speak not you?
*Don Pedro.* What should I speak?
I stand dishonour'd that have gone about
To link my dear friend to a common stale.
*Leonato.* Are these things spoken, or do I but dream?
*Don John.* Sir, they are spoken, and these things are true.
*Benedick.* This looks not like a nuptial.
*Hero.* True! O God!
*Claudio.* Leonato, stand I here?
Is this the prince? is this the prince's brother?
Is this face Hero's? are our eyes our own?
*Leonato.* All this is so; but what of this, my lord?
*Claudio.* Let me but move one question to your daughter;
And, by that fatherly and kindly power
That you have in her, bid her answer truly.
*Leonato.* I charge thee do so, as thou art my child.
*Hero.* O, God defend me! how am I beset!—
What kind of catechising call you this?
*Claudio.* To make you answer truly to your name.
*Hero.* Is it not Hero? Who can blot that name
With any just reproach?
*Claudio.* Marry, that can Hero;
Hero itself can blot out Hero's virtue.

What man was he talk'd with you yesternight
Out at your window betwixt twelve and one?
Now, if you are a maid, answer to this.

*Hero.* I talk'd with no man at that hour, my lord.

*Don Pedro.* Why, then are you no maiden. — Leonato,
I am sorry you must hear; upon mine honour,
Myself, my brother, and this grieved count
Did see her, hear her, at that hour last night
Talk with a ruffian at her chamber-window,
Who hath indeed, most like a liberal villain,
Confess'd the vile encounters they have had
A thousand times in secret.

*Don John.* Fie, fie! they are not to be nam'd, my lord,
Not to be spoke of;
There is not chastity enough in language
Without offence to utter them. — Thus, pretty lady,
I am sorry for thy much misgovernment.

*Claudio.* O Hero, what a Hero hadst thou been,
If half thy outward graces had been plac'd
About thy thoughts and counsels of thy heart!
But fare thee well, most foul, most fair! farewell,
Thou pure impiety and impious purity!
For thee I 'll lock up all the gates of love,
And on my eyelids shall conjecture hang,
To turn all beauty into thoughts of harm,
And never shall it more be gracious.

*Leonato.* Hath no man's dagger here a point for me?

[*Hero swoons.*

*Beatrice.* Why, how now, cousin! wherefore sink you down?

*Don John.* Come, let us go. These things, come thus to light,
Smother her spirits up.

[*Exeunt Don Pedro, Don John, and Claudio.*

*Benedick.* How doth the lady?

*Beatrice.* Dead, I think. — Help, uncle! — Hero! why, Hero! — Uncle! — Signior Benedick! — Friar!

*Leonato.* O Fate! take not away thy heavy hand.
Death is the fairest cover for her shame
That may be wish'd for.

*Beatrice.* How now, cousin Hero!

*Friar Francis.* Have comfort, lady.

*Leonato.* Dost thou look up?

*Friar Francis.* Yea, wherefore should she not?

*Leonato.* Wherefore! Why, doth not every earthly thing
Cry shame upon her? Could she here deny
The story that is printed in her blood? —
Do not live, Hero, do not ope thine eyes;
For, did I think thou wouldst not quickly die,
Thought I thy spirits were stronger than thy shames,
Myself would, on the rearward of reproaches,
Strike at thy life. Griev'd I, I had but one?
Chid I for that at frugal nature's frame?
O, one too much by thee! Why had I one?
Why ever wast thou lovely in my eyes?

Why had I not with charitable hand
Took up a beggar's issue at my gates,
Who smirched thus and mir'd with infamy,
I might have said 'No part of it is mine;
This shame derives itself from unknown loins?'
But mine, and mine I lov'd, and mine I prais'd,
And mine that I was proud on, mine so much
That I myself was to myself not mine,
Valuing of her, — why, she, O, she is fallen
Into a pit of ink, that the wide sea
Hath drops too few to wash her clean again,
And salt too little which may season give
To her foul-tainted flesh!

*Benedick.* Sir, sir, be patient.
For my part, I am so attir'd in wonder
I know not what to say.

*Beatrice.* O, on my soul, my cousin is belied!

*Benedick.* Lady, were you her bedfellow last night?

*Beatrice.* No, truly not; although, until last night,
I have this twelvemonth been her bedfellow.

*Leonato.* Confirm'd, confirm'd! O, that is stronger made
Which was before barr'd up with ribs of iron!
Would the two princes lie, and Claudio lie,
Who lov'd her so that, speaking of her foulness,
Wash'd it with tears? Hence from her! let her die.

*Friar Francis.* Hear me a little;
For I have only silent been so long,
And given way unto this course of fortune,

By noting of the lady. I have mark'd
A thousand blushing apparitions
To start into her face, a thousand innocent shames
In angel whiteness bear away those blushes;
And in her eye there hath appear'd a fire
To burn the errors that these princes hold
Against her maiden truth. — Call me a fool;
Trust not my reading nor my observations,
Which with experimental seal doth warrant
The tenor of my book; trust not my age,
My reverence, calling, nor divinity,
If this sweet lady lie not guiltless here
Under some biting error.

*Leonato.* Friar, it cannot be.
Thou seest that all the grace that she hath left
Is that she will not add to her damnation
A sin of perjury; she not denies it.
Why seek'st thou then to cover with excuse
That which appears in proper nakedness?

*Friar Francis.* Lady, what man is he you are accus'd of?

*Hero.* They know that do accuse me; I know none.
If I know more of any man alive
Than that which maiden modesty doth warrant,
Let all my sins lack mercy! — O my father,
Prove you that any man with me convers'd
At hours unmeet, or that I yesternight
Maintain'd the change of words with any creature,
Refuse me, hate me, torture me to death!

*Friar Francis.* There is some strange misprision in the princes.

*Benedick.* Two of them have the very bent of honour;

And if their wisdoms be misled in this,
The practice of it lives in John the bastard,
Whose spirits toil in frame of villanies.

*Leonato.* I know not. If they speak but truth of her,
These hands shall tear her; if they wrong her honour,
The proudest of them shall well hear of it.
Time hath not yet so dried this blood of mine,
Nor age so eat up my invention,
Nor fortune made such havoc of my means,
Nor my bad life reft me so much of friends,
But they shall find, awak'd in such a kind,
Both strength of limb and policy of mind,
Ability in means and choice of friends,
To quit me of them throughly.

*Friar Francis.* Pause awhile,
And let my counsel sway you in this case.
Your daughter here the princes left for dead,
Let her awhile be secretly kept in,
And publish it that she is dead indeed;
Maintain a mourning ostentation,
And on your family's old monument
Hang mournful epitaphs and do all rites
That appertain unto a burial.

*Leonato.* What shall become of this? what will this do?

*Friar Francis.* Marry, this well carried shall on her behalf
Change slander to remorse; that is some good.
But not for that dream I on this strange course,
But on this travail look for greater birth.
She dying, as it must be so maintain'd,
Upon the instant that she was accus'd,
Shall be lamented, pitied, and excus'd
Of every hearer; for it so falls out
That what we have we prize not to the worth
Whiles we enjoy it, but being lack'd and lost,
Why, then we rack the value, then we find
The virtue that possession would not show us
Whiles it was ours. So will it fare with Claudio.
When he shall hear she died upon his words,
The idea of her life shall sweetly creep
Into his study of imagination,
And every lovely organ of her life
Shall come apparell'd in more precious habit,
More moving-delicate and full of life,
Into the eye and prospect of his soul,
Than when she liv'd indeed; then shall he mourn,
If ever love had interest in his liver,
And wish he had not so accused her,
No, though he thought his accusation true.
Let this be so, and doubt not but success
Will fashion the event in better shape
Than I can lay it down in likelihood.
But if all aim but this be levell'd false,

The supposition of the lady's death
Will quench the wonder of her infamy;
And if it sort not well, you may conceal her,
As best befits her wounded reputation,
In some reclusive and religious life,
Out of all eyes, tongues, minds, and injuries.

*Benedick.* Signior Leonato, let the friar advise you;
And though you know my inwardness and love
Is very much unto the prince and Claudio,
Yet, by mine honour, I will deal in this
As secretly and justly as your soul
Should with your body.

*Leonato.* Being that I flow in grief,
The smallest twine may lead me.

*Friar Francis.* 'T is well consented; presently away,
For to strange sores strangely they strain the cure. —
Come, lady, die to live. This wedding-day
Perhaps is but prolong'd; have patience and endure.

[*Exeunt all but Benedick and Beatrice.*

*Benedick.* Lady Beatrice, have you wept all this while?

*Beatrice.* Yea, and I will weep a while longer.

*Benedick.* I will not desire that.

*Beatrice.* You have no reason; I do it freely.

*Benedick.* Surely I do believe your fair cousin is wronged.

*Beatrice.* Ah, how much might the man deserve of me that would right her!

*Benedick.* Is there any way to show such friendship?

*Beatrice.* A very even way, but no such friend.

*Benedick.* May a man do it?

*Beatrice.* It is a man's office, but not yours.

*Benedick.* I do love nothing in the world so well as you; is not that strange?

*Beatrice.* As strange as the thing I know not. It were as possible for me to say I loved nothing so well as you; but believe me not; and yet I lie not; I confess nothing, nor I deny nothing. — I am sorry for my cousin.

*Benedick.* By my sword, Beatrice, thou lovest me.

*Beatrice.* Do not swear by it, and eat it.

*Benedick.* I will swear by it that you love me, and I will make him eat it that says I love not you.

*Beatrice.* Will you not eat your word?

*Benedick.* With no sauce that can be devised to it. I protest I love thee.

*Beatrice.* Why, then, God forgive me!

*Benedick.* What offence, sweet Beatrice?

*Beatrice.* You have stayed me in a happy hour; I was about to protest I loved you.

*Benedick.* And do it with all thy heart.

*Beatrice.* I love you with so much of my heart that none is left to protest.

*Benedick.* Come, bid me do any thing for thee.

*Beatrice.* Kill Claudio.

*Benedick.* Ha! not for the wide world.

*Beatrice.* You kill me to deny it. Farewell.

*Benedick.* Tarry, sweet Beatrice.

*Beatrice.* I am gone, though I am here; there is no love in you. — Nay, I pray you, let me go.

*Benedick.* Beatrice, —

*Beatrice.* In faith, I will go.

*Benedick.* We 'll be friends first.

*Beatrice.* You dare easier be friends with me than fight with mine enemy.

*Benedick.* Is Claudio thine enemy?

*Beatrice.* Is he not approved in the height a villain, that hath slandered, scorned, dishonoured my kinswoman? O that I were a man! What, bear her in hand until they come to take hands; and then, with public accusation, uncovered slander, unmitigated rancour, — O God, that I were a man! I would eat his heart in the market-place.

*Benedick.* Hear me, Beatrice, —

*Beatrice.* Talk with a man out at a window! A proper saying!

*Benedick.* Nay, but, Beatrice, —

*Beatrice.* Sweet Hero! She is wronged, she is slandered, she is undone.

*Benedick.* Beat —

*Beatrice.* Princes and counties! Surely, a princely testimony, a goodly count, Count Comfect; a sweet gallant, surely! O that I were a man for his sake! or that I had any friend would be a man for my sake! But manhood is melted into courtesies, valour into compliment, and men are only turned into tongue, and trim ones too; he is now as valiant as

Hercules that only tells a lie and swears it. — I cannot be a man with wishing, therefore I will die a woman with grieving.

*Benedick.* Tarry, good Beatrice. By this hand, I love thee.

*Beatrice.* Use it for my love some other way than swearing by it.

*Benedick.* Think you in your soul the Count Claudio hath wronged Hero? 330

*Beatrice.* Yea, as sure as I have a thought or a soul.

*Benedick.* Enough, I am engaged; I will challenge him. I will kiss your hand, and so I leave you. By this hand, Claudio shall render me a dear account. As you hear of me, so think of me. Go, comfort your cousin; I must say she is dead. And so, farewell.

[*Exeunt.*

## Scene II. *A Prison*

*Enter* Dogberry, Verges, *and* Sexton, *in gowns; and the* Watch, *with* Conrade *and* Borachio

*Dogberry.* Is our whole dissembly appeared?

*Verges.* O, a stool and a cushion for the sexton.

*Sexton.* Which be the malefactors?

*Dogberry.* Marry, that am I and my partner.

*Verges.* Nay, that 's certain; we have the exhibition to examine.

*Sexton.* But which are the offenders that are to be examined? let them come before master constable.

*Dogberry.* Yea, marry, let them come before me. — What is your name, friend?

*Borachio.* Borachio.

*Dogberry.* Pray, write down, Borachio. — Yours, sirrah?

*Conrade.* I am a gentleman, sir, and my name is Conrade.

*Dogberry.* Write down, master gentleman Conrade. — Masters, do you serve God?

*Conrade.* } Yea, sir, we hope.
*Borachio.* }

*Dogberry.* Write down, that they hope they serve God; and write God first, for God defend but God should go before such villains! — Masters, it is proved already that you are little better than false knaves; and it will go near to be thought so shortly. How answer you for yourselves?

*Conrade.* Marry, sir, we say we are none.

*Dogberry.* A marvellous witty fellow, I assure you; but I will go about with him. — Come you hither, sirrah; a word in your ear: sir, I say to you, it is thought you are false knaves.

*Borachio.* Sir, I say to you we are none.

*Dogberry.* Well, stand aside. — Fore God, they are both in a tale. — Have you writ down that they are none?

*Sexton.* Master constable, you go not the way to examine; you must call forth the watch that are their accusers.

*Dogberry.* Yea, marry, that 's the eftest way. — Let the watch come forth. — Masters, I charge you, in the prince's name, accuse these men.

1 *Watch.* This man said, sir, that Don John, the prince's brother, was a villain.

*Dogberry.* Write down Prince John a villain. — Why, this is flat perjury, to call a prince's brother villain.

*Borachio.* Master constable, —

*Dogberry.* Pray thee, fellow, peace; I do not like thy look, I promise thee.

*Sexton.* What heard you him say else?

2 *Watch.* Marry, that he had received a thousand ducats of Don John for accusing the Lady Hero wrongfully.

*Dogberry.* Flat burglary as ever was committed.

*Verges.* Yea, by the mass, that it is.

*Sexton.* What else, fellow?

1 *Watch.* And that Count Claudio did mean, upon his words, to disgrace Hero before the whole assembly, and not marry her.

*Dogberry.* O villain! thou wilt be condemned into everlasting redemption for this.

*Sexton.* What else?

*Watch.* This is all.

*Sexton.* And this is more, masters, than you can deny. Prince John is this morning secretly stolen away; Hero was in this manner accused, in this very manner refused, and upon the grief of this suddenly

died. — Master constable, let these men be bound, and brought to Leonato's; I will go before and show him their examination. [*Exit.*

*Dogberry.* Come, let them be opinioned.

*Verges.* Let them be in the hands — 70

*Conrade.* Off, coxcomb!

*Dogberry.* God 's my life, where 's the sexton? let him write down the prince's officer coxcomb. — Come, bind them. — Thou naughty varlet!

*Conrade.* Away! you are an ass, you are an ass.

*Dogberry.* Dost thou not suspect my place? dost thou not suspect my years? — O that he were here to write me down an ass! — But, masters, remember that I am an ass; though it be not written down, yet forget not that I am an ass. — No, thou villain, thou 80 art full of piety, as shall be proved upon thee by good witness. I am a wise fellow, and, which is more, an officer; and, which is more, a householder; and, which is more, as pretty a piece of flesh as any is in Messina, and one that knows the law, go to; and a rich fellow enough, go to; and a fellow that hath had losses; and one that hath two gowns and every thing handsome about him. — Bring him away. — O that I had been writ down an ass! [*Exeunt.*

HERO'S TOMB

## ACT V

### SCENE I. *Before Leonato's House*

*Enter* LEONATO *and* ANTONIO

*Antonio.* If you go on thus, you will kill yourself;
And 't is not wisdom thus to second grief
Against yourself.

*Leonato.* I pray thee, cease thy counsel,
Which falls into mine ears as profitless
As water in a sieve; give not me counsel,
Nor let no comforter delight mine ear
But such a one whose wrongs do suit with mine.
Bring me a father that so lov'd his child,
Whose joy of her is overwhelm'd like mine,

And bid him speak of patience;
Measure his woe the length and breadth of mine,
And let it answer every strain for strain,
As thus for thus, and such a grief for such,
In every lineament, branch, shape, and form.
If such a one will smile and stroke his beard,
Bid sorrow wag, cry 'hem!' when he should groan,
Patch grief with proverbs, make misfortune drunk
With candle-wasters, bring him yet to me,
And I of him will gather patience.
But there is no such man; for, brother, men
Can counsel and speak comfort to that grief
Which they themselves not feel, but, tasting it,
Their counsel turns to passion, which before
Would give perceptial medicine to rage,
Fetter strong madness in a silken thread,
Charm ache with air and agony with words.
No, no; 't is all men's office to speak patience
To those that wring under the load of sorrow,
But no man's virtue nor sufficiency
To be so moral when he shall endure
The like himself. Therefore give me no counsel;
My griefs cry louder than advertisement.

*Antonio.* Therein do men from children nothing differ.

*Leonato.* I pray thee, peace. I will be flesh and blood;
For there was never yet philosopher
That could endure the toothache patiently,
However they have writ the style of gods
And made a push at chance and sufferance.

*Antonio.* Yet bend not all the harm upon yourself;
Make those that do offend you suffer too.
*Leonato.* There thou speak'st reason; nay, I will do so.
My soul doth tell me Hero is belied,
And that shall Claudio know; so shall the prince
And all of them that thus dishonour her.
*Antonio.* Here comes the prince and Claudio hastily.

*Enter* Don Pedro *and* Claudio

*Don Pedro.* Good den, good den.
*Claudio.* Good day to both of you.
*Leonato.* Hear you, my lords, —
*Don Pedro.* We have some haste, Leonato.
*Leonato.* Some haste, my lord! well, fare you well, my lord.
Are you so hasty now? well, all is one.
*Don Pedro.* Nay, do not quarrel with us, good old man.
*Antonio.* If he could right himself with quarrelling,
Some of us would lie low.
*Claudio.* Who wrongs him?
*Leonato.* Marry, thou dost wrong me; thou dissembler, thou! —
Nay, never lay thy hand upon thy sword;
I fear thee not.
*Claudio.* Marry, beshrew my hand
If it should give your age such cause of fear;
In faith, my hand meant nothing to my sword.
*Leonato.* Tush, tush, man, never fleer and jest at me;
I speak not like a dotard nor a fool,

As under privilege of age to brag
What I have done being young, or what would do
Were I not old. Know, Claudio, to thy head,
Thou hast so wrong'd mine innocent child and me
That I am forc'd to lay my reverence by,
And, with grey hairs and bruise of many days,
Do challenge thee to trial of a man.
I say thou hast belied mine innocent child.
Thy slander hath gone through and through her heart,
And she lies buried with her ancestors;
O, in a tomb where never scandal slept,
Save this of hers, fram'd by thy villany!
*Claudio.* My villany?
*Leonato.* Thine, Claudio, thine, I say.
*Don Pedro.* You say not right, old man.
*Leonato.* My lord, my lord,
I 'll prove it on his body if he dare,
Despite his nice fence and his active practice,
His May of youth and bloom of lustihood.
*Claudio.* Away! I will not have to do with you.
*Leonato.* Canst thou so daff me? Thou hast kill'd my child;
If thou kill'st me, boy, thou shalt kill a man.
*Antonio.* He shall kill two of us, and men indeed.
But that 's no matter; let him kill one first,
Win me and wear me; let him answer me.
Come, follow me, boy; come, sir boy, come, follow me.
Sir boy, I 'll whip you from your foining fence;
Nay, as I am a gentleman, I will.

*Leonato.* Brother, —

*Antonio.* Content yourself. God knows I lov'd my niece;

And she is dead, slander'd to death by villains,
That dare as well answer a man indeed
As I dare take a serpent by the tongue, —
Boys, apes, braggarts, Jacks, milksops!

*Leonato.* Brother Antony, —

*Antonio.* Hold you content. What, man! I know them, yea,

And what they weigh, even to the utmost scruple, —
Scambling, out-facing, fashion-monging boys,
That lie and cog and flout, deprave and slander,
Go anticly, show outward hideousness,
And speak off half a dozen dangerous words,
How they might hurt their enemies, if they durst;
And this is all.

*Leonato.* But, brother Antony, —

*Antonio.* Come, 't is no matter;
Do not you meddle, let me deal in this.

*Don Pedro.* Gentlemen both, we will not wake your patience. —

My heart is sorry for your daughter's death;
But, on my honour, she was charg'd with nothing
But what was true and very full of proof.

*Leonato.* My lord, my lord, —

*Don Pedro.* I will not hear you.

*Leonato.* No? Come, brother, away! I will be heard.

*Antonio.* And shall, or some of us will smart for it.

[*Exeunt Leonato and Antonio.*

*Don Pedro.* See, see; here comes the man we went to seek.

*Enter* BENEDICK

*Claudio.* Now, signior, what news?

*Benedick.* Good day, my lord.

*Don Pedro.* Welcome, signior; you are almost come to part almost a fray.

*Claudio.* We had like to have had our two noses snapped off with two old men without teeth.

*Don Pedro.* Leonato and his brother. What thinkest thou? Had we fought, I doubt we should have been too young for them.

*Benedick.* In a false quarrel there is no true valour. I came to seek you both.

*Claudio.* We have been up and down to seek thee; for we are high-proof melancholy and would fain have it beaten away. Wilt thou use thy wit?

*Benedick.* It is in my scabbard; shall I draw it?

*Don Pedro.* Dost thou wear thy wit by thy side?

*Claudio.* Never any did so, though very many have been beside their wit. I will bid thee draw, as we do the minstrels; draw, to pleasure us.

*Don Pedro.* As I am an honest man, he looks pale. — Art thou sick, or angry?

*Claudio.* What, courage, man! What though care killed a cat, thou hast mettle enough in thee to kill care.

*Benedick.* Sir, I shall meet your wit in the career, an you charge it against me. I pray you choose another subject.

*Claudio.* Nay, then, give him another staff; this last was broke cross.

*Don Pedro.* By this light, he changes more and more; I think he be angry indeed.

*Claudio.* If he be, he knows how to turn his girdle.

*Benedick.* Shall I speak a word in your ear?

*Claudio.* God bless me from a challenge!

*Benedick.* [*Aside to Claudio*] You are a villain; I jest not. I will make it good how you dare, with what you dare, and when you dare. Do me right, or I will protest your cowardice. You have killed a sweet lady, and her death shall fall heavy on you. Let me hear from you.

*Claudio.* Well, I will meet you, so I may have good cheer.

*Don Pedro.* What, a feast, a feast?

*Claudio.* I' faith, I thank him; he hath bid me to a calf's head and a capon, the which if I do not carve most curiously, say my knife 's naught. — Shall I not find a woodcock too?

*Benedick.* Sir, your wit ambles well; it goes easily.

*Don Pedro.* I 'll tell thee how Beatrice praised thy wit the other day. I said, thou hadst a fine wit. 'True,' said she, 'a fine little one.' 'No,' said I, 'a great wit.' 'Right,' says she, 'a great gross one.' 'Nay,' said I, 'a good wit.' 'Just,' said she, 'it

hurts nobody.' 'Nay,' said I, 'the gentleman is wise.' 'Certain,' said she, 'a wise gentleman.' 'Nay,' said I, 'he hath the tongues.' 'That I believe,' said she, 'for he swore a thing to me on Monday night, which he forswore on Tuesday morning; there 's a double tongue, there 's two tongues.' Thus did she, an hour together, trans-shape thy particular virtues; yet at last she concluded with a sigh, thou wast the properest man in Italy.

*Claudio.* For the which she wept heartily and said she cared not.

*Don Pedro.* Yea, that she did; but yet, for all that, an if she did not hate him deadly, she would love him dearly. The old man's daughter told us all.

*Claudio.* All, all; and, moreover, God saw him when he was hid in the garden.

*Don Pedro.* But when shall we set the savage bull's horns on the sensible Benedick's head?

*Claudio.* Yea, and text underneath, 'Here dwells Benedick the married man?'

*Benedick.* Fare you well, boy; you know my mind. I will leave you now to your gossip-like humour; you break jests as braggarts do their blades, which, God be thanked, hurt not. — My lord, for your many courtesies I thank you; I must discontinue your company. Your brother the bastard is fled from Messina; you have among you killed a sweet and innocent lady. For my Lord Lackbeard

there, he and I shall meet; and till then peace be with him. [*Exit.*

*Don Pedro.* He is in earnest.

*Claudio.* In most profound earnest; and, I 'll warrant you, for the love of Beatrice.

*Don Pedro.* And hath challenged thee.

*Claudio.* Most sincerely.

*Don Pedro.* What a pretty thing man is when he goes in his doublet and hose and leaves off his wit!

*Claudio.* He is then a giant to an ape; but then is an ape a doctor to such a man.

*Don Pedro.* But, soft you, let me see; pluck up, my heart, and be sad. Did he not say my brother was fled?

*Enter* DOGBERRY, VERGES, *and the* Watch, *with* CONRADE *and* BORACHIO

*Dogberry.* Come you, sir; if justice cannot tame you, she shall ne'er weigh more reasons in her balance. Nay, an you be a cursing hypocrite once, you must be looked to.

*Don Pedro.* How now? two of my brother's men bound! Borachio one!

*Claudio.* Hearken after their offence, my lord.

*Don Pedro.* Officers, what offence have these men done?

*Dogberry.* Marry, sir, they have committed false report; moreover, they have spoken untruths; secondarily, they are slanders; sixth and lastly, they

have belied a lady; thirdly, they have verified unjust things; and, to conclude, they are lying knaves.

*Don Pedro.* First, I ask thee what they have done; thirdly, I ask thee what 's their offence; sixth and lastly, why they are committed; and, to conclude, what you lay to their charge.

*Claudio.* Rightly reasoned, and in his own division; and, by my troth, there 's one meaning well suited.

*Don Pedro.* Who have you offended, masters, that you are thus bound to your answer? this learned constable is too cunning to be understood; what 's your offence?

*Borachio.* Sweet prince, let me go no farther to mine answer; do you hear me, and let this count kill me. I have deceived even your very eyes; what your wisdoms could not discover, these shallow fools have brought to light, who in the night overheard me confessing to this man how Don John your brother incensed me to slander the Lady Hero, how you were brought into the orchard and saw me court Margaret in Hero's garments, how you disgraced her when you should marry her. My villany they have upon record, which I had rather seal with my death than repeat over to my shame. The lady is dead upon mine and my master's false accusation; and, briefly, I desire nothing but the reward of a villain.

*Don Pedro.* Runs not this speech like iron through your blood?

*Claudio.* I have drunk poison whiles he utter'd it.

*Don Pedro.* But did my brother set thee on to this?

*Borachio.* Yea, and paid me richly for the practice of it.

*Don Pedro.* He is compos'd and fram'd of treachery;
And fled he is upon this villany.

*Claudio.* Sweet Hero! now thy image doth appear
In the rare semblance that I lov'd it first.

*Dogberry.* Come, bring away the plaintiffs. By this time our sexton hath reformed Signior Leonato of the matter; and, masters, do not forget to specify, when time and place shall serve, that I am an ass.

*Verges.* Here, here comes master Signior Leonato, and the sexton too.

*Re-enter* LEONATO *and* ANTONIO, *with the* Sexton

*Leonato.* Which is the villain? let me see his eyes,
That when I note another man like him
I may avoid him; which of these is he?

*Borachio.* If you would know your wronger, look on me.

*Leonato.* Art thou the slave that with thy breath hast kill'd
Mine innocent child?

*Borachio.* Yea, even I alone.

*Leonato.* No, not so, villain; thou beliest thyself.
Here stand a pair of honourable men;
A third is fled, that had a hand in it. —
I thank you, princes, for my daughter's death.

Record it with your high and worthy deeds;
'T was bravely done, if you bethink you of it.
*Claudio.* I know not how to pray your patience,
Yet I must speak. Choose your revenge yourself;
Impose me to what penance your invention
Can lay upon my sin; yet sinn'd I not
But in mistaking.
*Don Pedro.* By my soul, nor I;
And yet, to satisfy this good old man,
I would bend under any heavy weight
That he 'll enjoin me to.
*Leonato.* I cannot bid you bid my daughter live,
That were impossible; but, I pray you both,
Possess the people in Messina here
How innocent she died; and if your love
Can labour aught in sad invention,
Hang her an epitaph upon her tomb
And sing it to her bones, sing it to-night. —
To-morrow morning come you to my house,
And since you could not be my son-in-law,
Be yet my nephew. My brother hath a daughter,
Almost the copy of my child that 's dead,
And she alone is heir to both of us;
Give her the right you should have given her cousin,
And so dies my revenge.
*Claudio.* O noble sir,
Your over-kindness doth wring tears from me!
I do embrace your offer; and dispose
For henceforth of poor Claudio.

*Leonato.* To-morrow then I will expect your coming;
To-night I take my leave. — This naughty man
Shall face to face be brought to Margaret,
Who I believe was pack'd in all this wrong,
Hir'd to it by your brother.

*Borachio.* No, by my soul, she was not,
Nor knew not what she did when she spoke to me,
But always hath been just and virtuous
In any thing that I do know by her.

*Dogberry.* Moreover, sir, which indeed is not under white and black, this plaintiff here, the offender, did call me ass; I beseech you, let it be remembered in his punishment. And also, the watch heard them talk of one Deformed; they say he wears a key in his ear and a lock hanging by it, and borrows money in God's name, the which he hath used so long and never paid that now men grow hard-hearted and will lend nothing for God's sake. Pray you, examine him upon that point.

*Leonato.* I thank thee for thy care and honest pains.

*Dogberry.* Your worship speaks like a most thankful and reverend youth; and I praise God for you.

*Leonato.* There 's for thy pains.

*Dogberry.* God save the foundation!

*Leonato.* Go, I discharge thee of thy prisoner, and I thank thee.

*Dogberry.* I leave an arrant knave with your worship, which I beseech your worship to correct

yourself, for the example of others. God keep your worship! I wish your worship well; God restore you to health! I humbly give you leave to depart; and if a merry meeting may be wished, God prohibit it! — Come, neighbour.

[*Exeunt Dogberry and Verges.*

*Leonato.* Until to-morrow morning, lords, farewell.

*Antonio.* Farewell, my lords; we look for you to-morrow.

*Don Pedro.* We will not fail.

*Claudio.* To-night I 'll mourn with Hero.

*Leonato.* [*To the watch*] Bring you these fellows on. —

We 'll talk with Margaret,
How her acquaintance grew with this lewd fellow.

[*Exeunt, severally.*

## Scene II. *Leonato's Orchard*

*Enter* Benedick *and* Margaret, *meeting*

*Benedick.* Pray thee, sweet Mistress Margaret, deserve well at my hands by helping me to the speech of Beatrice.

*Margaret.* Will you then write me a sonnet in praise of my beauty?

*Benedick.* In so high a style, Margaret, that no man living shall come over it; for, in most comely truth, thou deservest it.

*Margaret.* To have no man come over me! why, shall I always keep below stairs?

*Benedick.* Thy wit is as quick as the greyhound's mouth; it catches.

*Margaret.* And yours as blunt as the fencer's foils, which hit but hurt not.

*Benedick.* A most manly wit, Margaret, it will not hurt a woman; and so, I pray thee, call Beatrice. I give thee the bucklers.

*Margaret.* Give us the swords; we have bucklers of our own.

*Benedick.* If you use them, Margaret, you must put in the pikes with a vice; and they are dangerous weapons for maids.

*Margaret.* Well, I will call Beatrice to you, who I think hath legs.

*Benedick.* And therefore will come. [*Exit Margaret.*

[Sings] *The god of love,*
*That sits above,*
*And knows me, and knows me,*
*How pitiful I deserve,* —

I mean in singing; but in loving, Leander the good swimmer, Troilus the first employer of panders, and a whole bookful of these quondam carpet-mongers, whose names yet run smoothly in the even road of a blank verse, why, they were never so truly turned over and over as my poor self in love. Marry, I cannot show it in rhyme; I have tried. I can find out no rhyme to 'lady' but 'baby,' an innocent rhyme; for 'scorn,' 'horn,' a hard rhyme; for 'school,' 'fool,' a babbling rhyme; very ominous

endings. No, I was not born under a rhyming planet, nor I cannot woo in festival terms. —

*Enter* BEATRICE

Sweet Beatrice, wouldst thou come when I called thee?

*Beatrice.* Yea, signior, and depart when you bid me.

*Benedick.* O, stay but till then!

*Beatrice.* 'Then' is spoken; fare you well now. And yet, ere I go, let me go with that I came, which is with knowing what hath passed between you and Claudio.

*Benedick.* Only foul words; and thereupon I will kiss thee.

*Beatrice.* Foul words is but foul wind, and foul wind is but foul breath, and foul breath is noisome; therefore I will depart unkissed.

*Benedick.* Thou hast frighted the word out of his right sense, so forcible is thy wit. But I must tell thee plainly, Claudio undergoes my challenge; and either I must shortly hear from him or I will subscribe him a coward. And, I pray thee now, tell me for which of my bad parts didst thou first fall in love with me?

*Beatrice.* For them all together, which maintained so politic a state of evil that they will not admit any good part to intermingle with them. But for which of my good parts did you first suffer love for me?

*Benedick.* Suffer love! a good epithet! I do suffer love indeed, for I love thee against my will.

*Beatrice.* In spite of your heart, I think; alas, poor heart! If you spite it for my sake, I will spite it for yours; for I will never love that which my friend hates.

*Benedick.* Thou and I are too wise to woo peaceably.

*Beatrice.* It appears not in this confession; there 's not one wise man among twenty that will praise himself.

*Benedick.* An old, an old instance, Beatrice, that lived in the time of good neighbours. If a man do not erect in this age his own tomb ere he dies, he shall live no longer in monument than the bell rings and the widow weeps.

*Beatrice.* And how long is that, think you?

*Benedick.* Question: why, an hour in clamour and a quarter in rheum; therefore is it most expedient for the wise, if Don Worm, his conscience, find no impediment to the contrary, to be the trumpet of his own virtues, as I am to myself. So much for praising myself, who, I myself will bear witness, is praiseworthy; and now tell me, how doth your cousin?

*Beatrice.* Very ill.

*Benedick.* And how do you?

*Beatrice.* Very ill too.

*Benedick.* Serve God, love me, and mend. There will I leave you too, for here comes one in haste.

*Enter* URSULA

*Ursula.* Madam, you must come to your uncle. Yonder's old coil at home: it is proved my Lady Hero hath been falsely accused, the prince and Claudio mightily abused; and Don John is the author of all, who is fled and gone. Will you come presently?

*Beatrice.* Will you go hear this news, signior?

*Benedick.* I will live in thy heart, die in thy lap, and be buried in thy eyes; and moreover I will go with thee to thy uncle's. [*Exeunt.*

## SCENE III. *A Church*

*Enter* DON PEDRO, CLAUDIO, *and three or four with tapers*

*Claudio.* Is this the monument of Leonato?

*A Lord.* It is, my lord.

*Claudio.* [Reading out of a scroll]

*Done to death by slanderous tongues*
*Was the Hero that here lies;*
*Death, in guerdon of her wrongs,*
*Gives her fame which never dies.*
*So the life that died with shame*
*Lives in death with glorious fame.*

Hang thou there upon the tomb, [*Affixing it.*
Praising her when I am dumb. —
Now, music, sound, and sing your solemn hymn.

Song

*Pardon, goddess of the night,*
*Those that slew thy virgin knight,*
*For the which, with songs of woe,*
*Round about her tomb they go.*
*Midnight, assist our moan;*
*Help us to sigh and groan,*
*Heavily, heavily.*
*Graves, yawn and yield your dead,*
*Till death be uttered,*
*Heavily, heavily.*

*Claudio.* Now, unto thy bones good night!
Yearly will I do this rite.

*Don Pedro.* Good morrow, masters; put your torches out.
The wolves have prey'd; and look, the gentle day,
Before the wheels of Phœbus, round about
Dapples the drowsy east with spots of grey.
Thanks to you all, and leave us; fare you well.

*Claudio.* Good morrow, masters; each his several way.

*Don Pedro.* Come, let us hence, and put on other weeds;
And then to Leonato's we will go.

*Claudio.* And Hymen now with luckier issue speed 's
Than this for whom we render'd up this woe!

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV. *A Room in Leonato's House*

*Enter* LEONATO, ANTONIO, BENEDICK, BEATRICE, MARGARET, URSULA, FRIAR FRANCIS, *and* HERO

*Friar Francis.* Did I not tell you she was innocent?

*Leonato.* So are the prince and Claudio, who accus'd her
Upon the error that you heard debated;
But Margaret was in some fault for this,
Although against her will, as it appears
In the true course of all the question.

*Antonio.* Well, I am glad that all things sort so well.

*Benedick.* And so am I, being else by faith enforc'd
To call young Claudio to a reckoning for it.

*Leonato.* Well, daughter, and you gentlewomen all,
Withdraw into a chamber by yourselves,
And when I send for you, come hither mask'd. —
[*Exeunt Ladies.*
The prince and Claudio promis'd by this hour
To visit me. — You know your office, brother;
You must be father to your brother's daughter
And give her to young Claudio.

*Antonio.* Which I will do with confirm'd countenance.

*Benedick.* Friar, I must entreat your pains, I think.

*Friar Francis.* To do what, signior?

*Benedick.* To bind me, or undo me; one of them. —
Signior Leonato, truth it is, good signior,
Your niece regards me with an eye of favour.

*Leonato.* That eye my daughter lent her; 't is most true.

*Benedick.* And I do with an eye of love requite her.

*Leonato.* The sight whereof I think you had from me,
From Claudio, and the prince; but what 's your will?

*Benedick.* Your answer, sir, is enigmatical;
But, for my will, my will is your good will
May stand with ours, this day to be conjoin'd
In the state of honourable marriage, —
In which, good friar, I shall desire your help.

*Leonato.* My heart is with your liking.

*Friar Francis.* And my help. —
Here comes the prince and Claudio.

*Enter* Don Pedro *and* Claudio, *and two or three others*

*Don Pedro.* Good morrow to this fair assembly.

*Leonato.* Good morrow, prince; — good morrow, Claudio.
We here attend you. Are you yet determin'd
To-day to marry with my brother's daughter?

*Claudio.* I 'll hold my mind, were she an Ethiope.

*Leonato.* Call her forth, brother; here 's the friar ready. [*Exit Antonio.*

*Don Pedro.* Good morrow, Benedick. Why, what 's the matter,
That you have such a February face,
So full of frost, of storm, and cloudiness?

*Claudio.* I think he thinks upon the savage bull. —
Tush, fear not, man; we 'll tip thy horns with gold,
And all Europa shall rejoice at thee,
As once Europa did at lusty Jove
When he would play the noble beast in love.
*Benedick.* Bull Jove, sir, had an amiable low;
And some such strange bull leap'd your father's cow,
And got a calf in that same noble feat
Much like to you, for you have just his bleat.
*Claudio.* For this I owe you; here comes other reckonings. —

*Re-enter* ANTONIO, *with the* Ladies *masked*

Which is the lady I must seize upon?
*Antonio.* This same is she, and I do give you her.
*Claudio.* Why, then she 's mine. — Sweet, let me see your face.
*Leonato.* No, that you shall not, till you take her hand
Before this friar and swear to marry her.
*Claudio.* Give me your hand; before this holy friar,
I am your husband, if you like of me.
*Hero.* And when I liv'd I was your other wife; [*Unmasking.*
And when you lov'd you were my other husband.
*Claudio.* Another Hero!
*Hero.* Nothing certainer;
One Hero died defil'd, but I do live,
And, surely as I live, I am a maid.

*Don Pedro.* The former Hero! Hero that is dead!

*Leonato.* She died, my lord, but whiles her slander liv'd.

*Friar Francis.* All this amazement can I qualify,
When after that the holy rites are ended
I 'll tell you largely of fair Hero's death.
Meantime let wonder seem familiar,
And to the chapel let us presently.

*Benedick.* Soft and fair, friar. — Which is Beatrice?

*Beatrice.* [*Unmasking*] I answer to that name. What is your will?

*Benedick.* Do not you love me?

*Beatrice.* Why, no; no more than reason.

*Benedick.* Why, then your uncle and the prince and Claudio
Have been deceiv'd; they swore you did.

*Beatrice.* Do not you love me?

*Benedick.* Troth, no; no more than reason.

*Beatrice.* Why, then my cousin, Margaret, and Ursula
Are much deceiv'd; for they did swear you did.

*Benedick.* They swore that you were almost sick for me.

*Beatrice.* They swore that you were well-nigh dead for me.

*Benedick.* 'T is no such matter. — Then you do not love me?

*Beatrice.* No, truly, but in friendly recompense.

*Leonato.* Come, cousin, I am sure you love the gentleman.

*Claudio.* And I 'll be sworn upon 't that he loves her;
For here 's a paper written in his hand,
A halting sonnet of his own pure brain,
Fashion'd to Beatrice.

*Hero.* And here 's another.
Writ in my cousin's hand, stolen from her pocket,
Containing her affection unto Benedick.

*Benedick.* A miracle! here 's our own hands against our hearts. — Come, I will have thee; but, by this light, I take thee for pity.

*Beatrice.* I would not deny you; but, by this good day, I yield upon great persuasion, and partly to save your life, for I was told you were in a consumption.

*Benedick.* Peace! I will stop your mouth.

[*Kissing her.*

*Don Pedro.* How dost thou, Benedick, the married man?

*Benedick.* I 'll tell thee what, prince, a college of wit-crackers cannot flout me out of my humour. Dost thou think I care for a satire or an epigram? No; if a man will be beaten with brains, he shall wear nothing handsome about him. In brief, since I do purpose to marry, I will think nothing to any purpose that the world can say against it; and therefore never flout at me for what I have said against it, for man is a giddy thing, and this is my conclusion. — For thy part, Claudio, I did think to have beaten thee; but in that thou art like to be my kinsman, live unbruised and love my cousin.

*Claudio.* I had well hoped thou wouldst have denied Beatrice, that I might have cudgelled thee out of thy single life, to make thee a double-dealer, which, out of question, thou wilt be if my cousin do not look exceeding narrowly to thee.

*Benedick.* Come, come, we are friends; let 's have a dance ere we are married, that we may lighten our hearts and our wives' heels.

*Leonato.* We 'll have dancing afterward. 120

*Benedick.* First, of my word; therefore play, music. — Prince, thou art sad; get thee a wife, get thee a wife. There is no staff more reverend than one tipped with horn.

*Enter a* Messenger

*Messenger.* My lord, your brother John is ta'en in flight,
And brought with armed men back to Messina.

*Benedick.* Think not on him till to-morrow; I 'll devise thee brave punishments for him. — Strike up, pipers. [*Dance.*

[*Exeunt.*

# NOTES

CUPIDS FORGING ARROWS

# NOTES

## INTRODUCTION

THE METRE OF THE PLAY. — It should be understood at the outset that *metre*, or the mechanism of verse, is something altogether distinct from the *music* of verse. The one is matter of rule, the other of taste and feeling. Music is not an absolute necessity of verse; the metrical form is a necessity, being that which constitutes the verse.

The plays of Shakespeare (with the exception of rhymed passages, and of occasional songs and interludes) are all in unrhymed or *blank* verse; and the normal form of this blank verse is illustrated by i. 1. 295 of the present play: "No child but Hero; she 's his only heir."

This line, it will be seen, consists of ten syllables, with the even syllables (2d, 4th, 6th, 8th, and 10th) accented, the odd syllables (1st, 3d, etc.) being unaccented. Theoretically, it is made up of five *feet* of two syllables each, with the accent on the second syllable. Such a foot is called an *iambus* (plural, *iambuses*, or the Latin *iambi*), and the form of verse is called *iambic*.

This fundamental law of Shakespeare's verse is subject to certain modifications, the most important of which are as follows: —

1. After the tenth syllable an unaccented syllable (or even two such syllables) may be added, forming what is sometimes called a *female* line; as in i. 1. 297: "When you went onward on this ended action." The rhythm is complete with the first syllable of *action*, the second being an extra eleventh syllable. In ii. 1. 171 ("But hear these ill news with the ears of Claudio") we have two extra syllables, the rhythm being complete with the first syllable of *Claudio*.

2. The accent in any part of the verse may be shifted from an even to an odd syllable; as in i. 1. 293: "Any hard lesson that may do thee good;" and 305: "Saying I lik'd her ere I went to wars." In both lines the accent is shifted from the second to the first syllable. This change occurs very rarely in the tenth syllable, and seldom in the fourth; and it is not allowable in two successive accented syllables.

3. An extra unaccented syllable may occur in any part of the line; as in i. 1. 324 and 325. In 324 the second syllable of *prisoner* is superfluous, and in 325 the second syllable of *amorous*. In iii. 1. 24, the second syllable of *Beatrice* is superfluous, as often.

4. Any unaccented syllable, occurring in an even place immediately before or after an even syllable which is properly accented, is reckoned as accented for the purposes of the verse; as, for instance, in i. 1. 303, 306, and 328. In 303 the last syllable of *delicate*, and in 306 and 328 that of *presently*, are metrically equivalent to accented syllables; and so with the third syllable of *minister* in 312 and the fourth of *necessity* in 317.

5. In many instances in Shakespeare words must be *lengthened* in order to fill out the rhythm: —

(*a*) In a large class of words in which *e* or *i* is followed by another vowel, the *e* or *i* is made a separate syllable; as *ocean*, *gracious* (see iv. 1. 106), *opinion*, *soldier*, *patience* (see v. 1. 10, 19, and 271), *partial*, *marriage*, etc. For instance, in this play, i. 1.

313 ("That know love's grief by his complexion") appears to have only nine syllables, but *complexion* is a quadrisyllable; and the same is true of *familiar* in v. 4. 70: "Meantime let wonder seem familiar." This lengthening occurs most frequently at the end of the line.

(*b*) Many monosyllables ending in *r*, *re*, *rs*, *res*, preceded by a long vowel or diphthong, are often made dissyllables; as *fare*, *fear*, *dear*, *fire*, *hair*, *hour*, *more*, *your*, etc. If the word is repeated in a verse it is often both monosyllable and dissyllable; as in *M. of V.* iii. 2. 20: "And so, though yours, not yours. Prove it so," where either *yours* (preferably the first) is a dissyllable, the other being a monosyllable. In *J. C.* iii. 1. 172: "As fire drives out fire, so pity, pity," the first *fire* is a dissyllable.

(*c*) Words containing *l* or *r*, preceded by another consonant, are often pronounced as if a vowel came between or after the consonants; as in *T. of S.* ii. 1. 158: "While she did call me rascal fiddler" [fiddl(e)er]; *All 's Well*, iii. 5. 43: "If you will tarry, holy pilgrim" [pilg(e)rim]; *C. of E.* v. 1. 360: "These are the parents of these children" (childeren, the original form of the word); *W. T.* iv. 4. 76: "Grace and remembrance [rememb(e)rance] be to you both!" etc. In the present play *assembly* in v. 4. 34 is a quadrisyllable, and *tickling* in iii. 1. 80 is a trisyllable.

(*d*) Monosyllabic exclamations (*ay*, *O*, *yea*, *nay*, *hail*, etc.) and monosyllables otherwise emphasized are similarly lengthened; also certain longer words; as *commandement* in *M. of V.* iv. 1. 451; *safety* (trisyllable) in *Ham.* i. 3. 21; *business* (trisyllable, as originally pronounced) in *J. C.* iv. 1. 22: "To groan and sweat under the business" (so in several other passages); and other words mentioned in the notes to the plays in which they occur.

6. Words are also *contracted* for metrical reasons, like plurals and possessives ending in a sibilant, as *balance*, *horse* (for *horses* and *horse's*), *princess*, *sense*, *marriage* (plural and possessive), *image*, etc. So with many adjectives in the superlative (like

*pleasant'st* in iii. 1. 26, *stern'st*, *kind'st*, *secret'st*, etc.), and certain other words.

7. The *accent* of words is also varied in many instances for metrical reasons. Thus we find both *révenue* and *revénue* in the first scene of *M. N. D.* (lines 6 and 158), *cónfine* (noun) and *confine*, *máture* and *matúre*, *púrsue* and *pursúe*, *distinct* and *distinct*, etc. In iii. 1. 71 and 73 of the present play we find *cómmendable*, but *comméndable* in *M. of V.* i. 1. 111.

These instances of variable accent must not be confounded with those in which words were uniformly accented differently in the time of Shakespeare; like *aspéct*, *impórtune*, *sepúlchre* (verb), *perséver* (never *persevére*), *perséverance*, *rheúmatic*, etc.

8. *Alexandrines*, or verses of twelve syllables, with six accents, occur here and there in the plays. They must not be confounded with female lines with two extra syllables (see on 1 above) or with other lines in which two extra unaccented syllables may occur.

9. *Incomplete* verses, of one or more syllables, are scattered through the plays. See iv. 1. 67, 92, 94, 110, 116, 117, etc.

10. *Doggerel* measure is used in the very earliest comedies (*L. L. L.* and *C. of E.* in particular) in the mouths of comic characters, but nowhere else in those plays, and never anywhere in plays written after 1598.

11. *Rhyme* occurs frequently in the early plays, but diminishes with comparative regularity from that period until the latest. Thus, in *L. L. L.* there are about 1100 rhyming verses (about one-third of the whole number), in the *M. N. D.* about 900, in *Rich. II.* and *R. and J.* about 500 each, while in *Cor.* and *A. and C.* there are only about 40 each, in *Temp.* only two, and in *W. T.* none at all, except in the chorus introducing act iv. Songs, interludes, and other matter not in ten-syllable measure are not included in this enumeration. In the present play, out of some 630 ten-syllable verses, only about forty are in rhyme.

*Alternate* rhymes are found only in the plays written before 1599 or 1600. In *L. L. L.* there are 242 lines of them, in *M. N. D.*

96, and in *C. of E.* 64. For examples in the present play, see iii. 1. 107–114, iv. 1. 249–252, and v. 3. 24–33.

*Rhymed couplets*, or "rhyme-tags," are often found at the end of scenes; as in 3 of the 17 scenes of the present play, which is largely in prose. In *Ham.* 14 out of 20 scenes, and in *Macb.* 21 out of 28, have such "tags;" but in the latest plays they are not so frequent. In *Temp.*, for instance, there is but one, and in *W. T.* none.

12. In this edition of Shakespeare, the final *-ed* of past tenses and participles *in verse* is printed *-'d* when the word is to be pronounced in the ordinary way; as in *look'd*, line 298, and *lik'd*, line 299, of the first scene. But when the metre requires that the *-ed* be made a separate syllable, the *e* is retained; as in *pleached*, iii. 1. 7, and *couched*, iii. 1. 30, both words being dissyllables. The only variation from this rule is in verbs like *cry*, *die*, *sue*, etc., the *-ed* of which is very rarely, if ever, made a separate syllable.

Shakespeare's Use of Verse and Prose in the Plays. — This is a subject to which the critics have given very little attention, but it is an interesting study. In *Much Ado* we find scenes entirely in verse or in prose, and others in which the two are mixed. In general, we may say that verse is used for what is distinctly poetical, and prose for what is not poetical. The distinction, however, is not so clearly marked in the earlier as in the later plays. The second scene of *M. of V.*, for instance, is in prose, because Portia and Nerissa are talking of the suitors in a familiar and playful way; but in *T. G. of V.*, where Julia and Lucetta are discussing the suitors of the former in much the same fashion, the scene is in verse. Dowden, commenting on *Rich. II.*, remarks: "Had Shakespeare written the play a few years later, we may be certain that the gardener and his servants (iii. 4) would not have uttered stately speeches in verse, but would have spoken homely prose, and that humour would have mingled with the pathos of the scene. The same remark may be made with reference to the sub-

sequent scene (v. 5) in which his groom visits the dethroned king in the Tower." Comic characters and those in low life generally speak in prose in the later plays, as Dowden intimates, but in the very earliest ones doggerel verse is much used instead. See on 10 above.

The change from prose to verse is well illustrated in the third scene of *M. of V.* It begins with plain prosaic talk about a business matter ; but when Antonio enters, it rises at once to the higher level of poetry. The sight of Antonio reminds Shylock of his hatred of the Merchant, and the passion expresses itself in verse, the vernacular tongue of poetry. We have a similar change in the first scene of *J. C.*, where, after the quibbling "chaff" of the mechanics about their trades, the mention of Pompey reminds the Tribune of their plebeian fickleness, and his scorn and indignation flame out in most eloquent verse. In the first scene of the present play, note the change from prose to verse when Claudio begins to tell Don Pedro of his love for Hero.

The reasons for the choice of prose or verse are not always so clear as in these instances. We are seldom puzzled to explain the prose, but not unfrequently we meet with verse where we might expect prose. As Professor Corson remarks (*Introduction to Shakespeare*, 1889), "Shakespeare adopted verse as the general tenor of his language, and therefore expressed much in verse that is within the capabilities of prose ; in other words, his verse constantly encroaches upon the domain of prose, but his prose can never be said to encroach upon the domain of verse." If in rare instances we think we find exceptions to this latter statement, and prose actually seems to usurp the place of verse, I believe that careful study of the passage will prove the supposed exception to be apparent rather than real.

Some Books for Teachers and Students. — A few out of the many books that might be commended to the teacher and the critical student are the following: Halliwell-Phillipps's *Outlines of the Life of Shakespeare* (7th ed. 1887); Sidney Lee's *Life of Shake-*

*speare* (1898; for ordinary students the abridged ed. of 1899 is preferable); Rolfe's *Life of Shakespeare* (1904); Schmidt's *Shakespeare Lexicon* (3d ed. 1902); Littledale's ed. of Dyce's *Glossary* (1902); Bartlett's *Concordance to Shakespeare* (1895); Abbott's *Shakespearian Grammar* (1873); Furness's "New Variorum" ed. of *Much Ado* (1899; encyclopædic and exhaustive); Dowden's *Shakspere: His Mind and Art* (American ed. 1881); Hudson's *Life, Art, and Characters of Shakespeare* (revised ed. 1882); Mrs. Jameson's *Characteristics of Women* (several eds.; some with the title, *Shakespeare Heroines*); Ten Brink's *Five Lectures on Shakespeare* (1895); Boas's *Shakespeare and His Predecessors* (1895); Dyer's *Folk-lore of Shakespeare* (American ed. 1884); Gervinus's *Shakespeare Commentaries* (Bunnett's translation, 1875); Wordsworth's *Shakespeare's Knowledge of the Bible* (3d ed. 1880); Elson's *Shakespeare in Music* (1901).

Some of the above books will be useful to all readers who are interested in special subjects or in general criticism of Shakespeare. Among those which are better suited to the needs of ordinary readers and students, the following may be mentioned: Mabie's *William Shakespeare: Poet, Dramatist, and Man* (1900); Dowden's *Shakspere Primer* (1877; small but invaluable); Rolfe's *Shakespeare the Boy* (1896; treating of the home and school life, the games and sports, the manners, customs, and folk-lore of the poet's time); Guerber's *Myths of Greece and Rome* (for young students who may need information on mythological allusions not explained in the notes).

Black's *Judith Shakespeare* (1884; a novel, but a careful study of the scene and the time) is a book that I always commend to young people, and their elders will also enjoy it. The Lambs' *Tales from Shakespeare* is a classic for beginners in the study of the dramatist; and in Rolfe's ed. the plan of the authors is carried out in the Notes by copious illustrative quotations from the plays. Mrs. Cowden-Clarke's *Girlhood of Shakespeare's Heroines* (Boston ed. 1904) will particularly interest girls; and both girls and boys

will find Bennett's *Master Skylark* (1897) and Imogen Clark's *Will Shakespeare's Little Lad* (1897) equally entertaining and instructive.

H. Snowden Ward's *Shakespeare's Town and Times* (2d ed. 1903) and John Leyland's *Shakespeare Country* (2d ed. 1902) are copiously illustrated books (yet inexpensive) which may be particularly commended for school libraries.

Abbreviations in the Notes. — The abbreviations of the names of Shakespeare's plays will be readily understood; as *T. N.* for *Twelfth Night*, *Cor.* for *Coriolanus*, 3 *Hen. VI.* for *The Third Part of King Henry the Sixth*, etc. *P. P.* refers to *The Passionate Pilgrim*; *V. and A.* to *Venus and Adonis*; *L. C.* to *Lover's Complaint*; and *Sonn.* to the *Sonnets*.

Other abbreviations that hardly need explanation are *Cf.* (*confer*, compare), *Fol.* (following), *Id.* (*idem*, the same), and *Prol.* (prologue). The numbers of the lines in the references (except for the present play) are those of the "Globe" edition (the cheapest and best edition of *Shakespeare* in one compact volume), which is now generally accepted as the standard for line-numbers in works of reference (Schmidt's *Lexicon*, Abbott's *Grammar*, Dowden's *Primer*, the publications of the New Shakspere Society, etc.).

---

## ACT I

Scene I. — The stage-direction in the folio, as in the quarto, reads "*Enter Leonato Gouernour of Messina, Innogen his wife*," etc.; but as Innogen neither speaks nor is mentioned during the play, Theobald dropped her name from the list of *dramatis personæ*. As he suggests, the poet may at first have intended to introduce her, but afterwards decided to leave her out. Furness, however, regards the introduction of the name as an "unmistakable trace of the original play." See p. 12 above.

1. *Don Pedro.* Both the quarto and the folio have "Don Peter" here and in 11 below, but elsewhere "Don Pedro."

3. *By this.* Cf. *Macb.* iii. 1. 26: "'Twixt this and supper;" *Lear*, i. 1. 118: "from this for ever," etc.

7. *Sort.* Probably = rank (Schmidt), as in 34 below. Cf. *Hen. V.* iv. 7. 142, iv. 8. 80, etc.

9. *Achiever.* Used by S. nowhere else.

19. *Will be.* Such omission of the relative is common in S.

20. *Very much glad.* We should not now use this expression, though we say "very much pleased," "very much delighted," etc.

23. *Joy could not*, etc. "Of all the transports of joy, that which is attended with tears is least offensive; because, carrying with it this mark of pain, it allays the envy that usually attends another's happiness. This he finely calls a *modest* joy, such an one as did not insult the observer by an indication of happiness unmixed with pain" (Warburton). Capell says that the *joy* "wore the modestest garb that joy can do, that is, silence and tears."

24. *Badge.* Steevens compares Chapman, *Odyssey*, x.: —

> "our eyes wore
> The same wet badge of weak humanity;"

and *Macb.* i. 4. 33: —

> "My plenteous joys,
> Wanton in fulness, seek to hide themselves
> In drops of sorrow."

27. *Kind.* Natural (Schmidt). Cf. *R. of L.* 1423: "Conceit deceitful, so compact, so kind." *Kindness* = tenderness. Cf. *T. N.* ii. 1. 41: "my bosom is full of kindness, and I am yet so near the manners of my mother that upon the least occasion more mine eyes will tell tales of me."

28. *Truer.* "Honester, more sincere" (Johnson).

31. *Montanto.* A term in fencing, meaning, according to Cotgrave, "an upright blow or thrust." Cf. *M. W.* ii. 3. 27: "thy punto, thy stock, thy reverse, thy distance, thy montant." Steevens

cites Jonson, *Every Man in his Humour*: "your punto, your reverso, your stoccata, your imbrocata, your passada, your montanto."

34. *Sort.* See on 7 above.

35. *What.* Who; as often. Cf. *Temp.* v. 1. 185: "What is this maid?" etc.

38. *Pleasant.* Facetious. Cf. *Hen. V.* i. 2. 259: "We are glad the Dauphin is so pleasant with us" (see also 281); *M. for M.* iii. 2. 120: "You are pleasant, sir," etc.

40. *Set up his bills.* That is, posted his challenge, like a prize-fighter. Steevens quotes Jonson, *Every Man out of his Humour*: "I have set up my bills without discovery;" and Nash, *Have With You*, etc.: "setting up bills, like a bearward or fencer, what fights we shall have, and what weapons she will meet me at." He also gives this extract from an old MS.: "Item a challenge playde before the King's majestie [Edward VI.] at Westminster, by three maisters, Willyam Pascall, Robert Greene, and W. Browne, at seven kynde of weapons. That is to say, the axe, the pike, the rapier and target, the rapier and cloke, and with two swords, agaynst all alyens and strangers being borne without the King's dominions, of what countrie so ever he or they were, geving them warninge by theyr bills set up by the three maisters, the space of eight weeks before the sayd challenge was playde; and it was holden four severall Sundayes one after another." It appears from the same work that all challenges "to any maister within the realme of Englande being an Englishe man" were against the rules of the "Noble Science of Defence." Saint Paul's was a place where these bills or advertisements were much posted. Nash, in his *Pierce Pennilesse*, speaks of "maisterlesse men that set up theyr bills in Paules for services, and such as paste up theyr papers on every post for arithmetique and writing schooles."

41. *Flight.* That is, shooting with the *flight*, which seems to have been a kind of arrow used for great distances. S. uses the word in this sense only here, but it is common in writers of the time. Cf. Beaumont and Fletcher, *Bonduca*: "not a flight drawn

home;" Middleton, *Game of Chess:* "discharg'd it like a flight," etc.

43. *Bird-bolt.* A short, thick, blunt-headed arrow, shot from a cross-bow and used to kill rooks with. Cf. Marston, *What You Will:*—

> "ignorance should shoot
> His gross-knobb'd bird-bolt."

Douce says: "The meaning of the whole is — Benedick, from a vain conceit of his influence over women, challenged Cupid at *roving* (a particular kind of archery in which *flight*-arrows are used); in other words, he challenged him to *shoot at hearts.* The fool, to ridicule this piece of vanity, in his turn challenged Benedick to shoot at crows with the cross-bow and bird-bolt; an inferior kind of archery used by fools, who, for obvious reasons, were not permitted to shoot with pointed arrows: whence the proverb, 'A fool's bolt is soon shot.'" Beatrice makes up the story in ridicule of Benedick, but of course it is founded on facts connected with archery, though we cannot be sure just what they were. Cf. *A. Y. L.* v. 4. 67 and *Hen. V.* iii. 7. 132. See also *L. L. L.* iv. 3. 25 and *T. N.* i. 5. 100.

46. *To eat,* etc. Cf. *Hen. V.* iii. 7. 99:—

> "*Rambures.* He longs to eat the English.
> *Constable.* I think he will eat all he kills."

47. *Tax.* Reproach, inveigh against. Cf. *A. Y. L.* ii. 7. 71, 86, *Ham.* i. 4. 18, iii. 3. 29, etc.

48. *Meet with you.* Even with you, a match for you. Steevens says that the expression is common in the Midland counties, and quotes Holiday, *Technogamia,* 1618: "Go meet her, or else she 'll be meet with me."

51. *Victual.* Elsewhere S. uses the plural. Bacon has both "Victual" and "Victuals" in *Essay* xxxiii. Cf. *Exodus,* xii. 39 and *Joshua,* i. 11. S. uses both *helped* and *holp* as past tense and as participle. For the former use of *holp,* see *K. John,* i. 1. 240,

*Cor.* v. 3. 63, etc.; and for the latter, *Temp.* i. 2. 63, *Rich. II.* v. 5. 62, *Macb.* i. 6. 23, etc. We find *holpen* in *Psalms*, lxxxiii. 8, *Daniel*, xi. 34, etc.

52. *Trencher-man.* Cf. *trencher-friend* (= parasite) in *T. of A.* iii. 6. 106, and *trencher-knight* (= waiter) in *L. L. L.* v. 2. 464 (cf. 476); also Lodge, *Wit's Miserie*, 1596: "His doublet is of cast satten cut sometime upon taffata, but that the bumbast hath eaten through it, and spotted here and there with pure fat to testifie that he is a good trencher-man."

59. *Stuffed.* Fully endowed. Cf. *R. and J.* iii. 5. 183: "Stuff'd as they say, with honourable parts;" and *W. T.* ii. 1. 185: "of stuff'd sufficiency." Edwards observes that Mede, in his *Discourses on Scripture*, speaks of Adam as "he whom God had stuffed with so many excellent qualities." Beatrice uses the word contemptuously = stuffed out, padded.

60. *Stuffing.* Halliwell-Phillipps says: "Beatrice seems to use the term *stuffing* in a sense analogous to the Latin *vestis fartum* (the stuffing of the dress; that is, the person inside it); or, possibly, in reference to his mental qualities."

*We are all mortal.* One of the affected phrases of the time. Cf. *Sir Gyles Goosecappe, Knight*, 1606: "Sir Gyles Goosecap has always a deathes head (as it were) in his mouth, for his onely one reason for every thing is, because wee are all mortall."

66. *Five wits.* The *wits*, or intellectual powers, seem to have been reckoned as five to correspond with the five senses, which were also called *wits*. Cf. Chaucer, *Persones Tale*: "the five wittis; as sight, hereing, smelling, savouring, and touching." Boswell quotes a prayer by Sir Thomas More, in which he asks to be forgiven for his sins "in mispending of my five wittes." Schmidt says that "the proverbial five wits" were "common wit, imagination, fantasy, estimation, memory." In *Sonn.* 141. 9 we find the two meanings distinguished: —

> "But my five wits nor my five senses can
> Dissuade one foolish heart from serving thee."

68. *To keep himself warm.* "To have wit enough to keep one's self warm" was a common proverb. Cf. *T. of S.* ii. 1. 268: —

> "*Petruchio.* Am I not wise?
> *Katharina.* Yes; keep you warm."

Steevens quotes among other examples of the phrase, Jonson, *Cynthia's Revels*, ii. 1: "your whole self cannot but be perfectly wise; for your hands have wit enough to keep themselves warm." Wright says that "it is still a common phrase in Ireland."

69. *Bear it for a difference.* That is, for a mark of distinction; a term in heraldry. Cf. *Ham.* iv. 5. 183: "you must wear your rue with a difference."

72. *Sworn brother.* Like the *fratres jurati* (sworn brothers) of chivalry, who took an oath to share each other's fortunes. Cf. *Rich. II.* v. 1. 20, 2 *Hen. IV.* iii. 2. 345, etc.

75. *Faith.* That is, his fidelity as a friend.

77. *Block.* Still the technical term for the wooden model on which hats are shaped. Cf. *Lear*, iv. 6. 187: "this' a good block." See also *Epigrammes by I. D.*, 1596: —

> "He weares a hat now of the flat-crowne blocke,
> The treble ruffes, long cloake, and doublet French;
> He takes tobacco, and doth weare a locke;
> And wastes more time in dressing then a wench;"

and Dekker, *Seven Deadly Sinnes of London*, 1606: "the blocke for his head alters faster then the feltmaker can fitte him, and thereupon we are called in scorne blockheads."

78. *Not in your books.* Evidently = not in favour with you, but the origin of the phrase has been much disputed. Johnson gives it "to be in one's codicils or will, to be among friends set down for legacies." Steevens takes the *books* to be memorandum-books, or, perhaps, heraldic records (cf. *T. of S.* ii. 1. 225). Farmer says "*to be in a man's books* originally meant to be in the list of his *retainers*." Knight explains it as a commercial allusion = one to whom you give credit. Schmidt, like Steevens, decides on "books

of memory" (1 *Hen. VI.* ii. 4. 101 and 2 *Hen. VI.* i. 1. 100), which seems the most plausible explanation.

82. *Squarer.* Quarreller, bully. Cf. *square* = quarrel in *M. N. D.* ii. 1. 30, *A. and C.* ii. 1. 45, iii. 3. 41, etc. *That will* = that is determined.

88. *Presently.* Immediately; the usual meaning in S. Cf. *Temp.* i. 2. 125, iv. 1. 42, v. 1. 101, etc.

90. *A thousand pound.* S. uses both *pounds* and *pound* in the plural with numbers; as also *shilling, mile, year,* etc.

91. *Hold friends with you.* For the plural, cf. *M. of V.* i. 3. 139: "I would be friends with you"; and *M. for M.* i. 2. 185:—

> "Implore her in my voice, that she make friends
> To the strict deputy."

S. has *hold friends* only here.

103. *Charge.* Burden, incumbrance (Johnson). Douce thinks it means "the person committed to your care."

110. *You have it full.* Schmidt explains this as = "you are the man, you will do," and compares *T. of S.* i. 1. 203; but it seems rather = you get as good as you sent, you are well answered.

112. *Fathers herself.* Is like her father; a phrase common in Dorsetshire (Steevens). For the verb, cf. *J. C.* ii. 1. 297, *Macb.* iv. 2. 27, etc.

117. *Still.* Continually; as in 134 below, and very often.

121. *Is it possible,* etc. Steevens compares *Cor.* ii. 1. 93: "Our very priests must become mockers, if they encounter such ridiculous subjects as you are."

123. *Convert.* For the intransitive use, cf. *R. of L.* 592, *Macb.* iv. 3. 229, *Rich. II.* v. 1. 66, v. 3. 64, etc.

126. *Of.* By. Cf. *Macb.* iii. 6. 27, etc.

129. *A dear happiness.* True good luck. Cf. *R. and J.* iii. 3. 28: "This is dear mercy."

135. *Scape.* Not "'scape," as often printed. It is often used in prose. Cf. *state* and *estate,* etc.

136. *Predestinate* is used by S. nowhere else. The form is common in participles of Latin origin.

145. *A jade's trick.* Cf. *A. W.* iv. 5. 64: "If I put any tricks upon 'em, sir, they shall be jade's tricks;" *T. and C.* ii. 1. 21: "a red murrain o' thy jade's tricks!" For *jade* = a worthless or vicious horse, see *V. and A.* 391, *J. C.* iv. 2. 26, etc.

157. *I am not of many words.* Cf. *M. for M.* ii. 1. 204: "Are you of fourscore pounds a year?" *Oth.* v. 1. 65: "Are you of good or evil?" Sir J. Hawkins says: "The poet has judiciously marked the gloominess of Don John's character by making him averse to the common forms of civility."

159. *Please it your grace,* etc. Will it please your grace, etc. Cf. *Temp.* iii. 3. 42: "Will 't please you taste of what is here?" The *to* is sometimes inserted; as in iii. 5. 20 below: "It pleases your worship to say so," etc.

166. *Do you question me,* etc. "A very noteworthy confession by Benedick that his raillery against 'their sex,' and, by inuendo, against marriage, is not genuine, but assumed; the subject was merely a fertile one whereon to expend his exuberant wit. This seems to have been quite overlooked by all critics" (Furness).

169. *Tyrant.* That is, one who shows no mercy. Cf. *M. for M.* ii. 4. 169: "I 'll prove a tyrant to him."

184. *Sad.* Serious. Cf. *A. Y. L.* iii. 2. 227: "Speak sad brow and true maid." See also i. 3. 58 and ii. 1. 340 below.

185. *Flouting Jack.* Cf. *Temp.* iv. 1. 198: "Monster, your fairy, which you say is a harmless fairy, has done little better than played the Jack with us." We have *flouting-stock* = (laughing-stock) in *M. W.* iii. 1. 120 and iv. 5. 83. Cf. the use of *flout* in ii. 3. 142, v. 1. 95, and v. 4. 101 below.

*To tell us Cupid is a good hare-finder,* etc. This puzzled Johnson and Steevens, but Tollet explains it: "Do you scoff and mock in telling us that Cupid, who is blind, is a good hare-finder, which requires a quick eyesight; and that Vulcan, a blacksmith, is a rare carpenter?"

187. *To go in.* To join you in.

191. *No such matter.* Nothing of the kind. See on ii. 3. 215 below.

*There 's her cousin,* etc. A hint of the half-liking for Beatrice which is hidden under Benedick's depreciation of her.

198. *In faith.* So in the folio, though it has "yfaith" just below. Furness remarks that here Benedick is speaking "with that slow deliberative manner . . . indicative of unbounded astonishment" — affected, of course.

199. *With suspicion.* That is, "on account of the horns hidden under it" (Schmidt). Cf. 241 and 264 below.

202. *Sigh away Sundays.* Possibly, as Steevens explains it, an allusion to the Puritanic observance of Sunday. Wright suggests: "when you will have most leisure to reflect on your captive condition;" and Furness adds: "and when, owing to the domesticity of the day, you cannot escape from your yokefellow."

213. *With who?* Cf. "To who?" in *Oth.* i. 2. 52, *Cymb.* iv. 2. 75, etc.

216. *If this were so,* etc. If this were the truth, so it would be uttered; or "if it is so, so it is."

217. *Like the old tale,* etc. Mr. Blakeway gives this *old tale* as he heard it in childhood from his great aunt: "Once upon a time, there was a young lady (called Lady Mary in the story), who had two brothers. One summer they all three went to a country-seat of theirs, which they had not before visited. Among the other gentry in the neighbourhood, who came to see them, was a Mr. Fox, a bachelor, with whom they, particularly the young lady, were much pleased. He used often to dine with them, and frequently invited Lady Mary to come and see his house. One day that her brothers were absent elsewhere, and she had nothing better to do, she determined to go thither, and accordingly set out unattended. When she arrived at the house and knocked at the door, no one answered. At length she opened it, and went in. Over the portal of the hall was written, 'Be bold, be bold, but not too bold.' She advanced —

over the staircase, the same inscription. She went up — over the entrance of a gallery, the same. She proceeded — over the door of a chamber, 'Be bold, be bold, but not to bold, lest that your heart's blood should run cold.' She opened it — it was full of skeletons, tubs full of blood, etc. She retreated in haste. Coming down stairs, she saw, out of a window, Mr. Fox advancing towards the house, with a drawn sword in one hand, while with the other he dragged along a young lady by her hair. Lady Mary had just time to slip down and hide herself, under the stairs, before Mr. Fox and his victim arrived at the foot of them. As he pulled the young lady up stairs, she caught hold of one of the bannisters with one hand, on which was a rich bracelet. Mr. Fox cut it off with his sword: the hand and bracelet fell into Lady Mary's lap, who then contrived to escape unobserved, and got home safe to her brother's house.

"After a few days Mr. Fox came to dine with them, as usual (whether by invitation, or of his own accord, this deponent saith not). After dinner, when the guests began to amuse each other with extraordinary anecdotes, Lady Mary at length said she would relate to them a remarkable dream she had lately had. 'I dreamed,' said she, 'that as you, Mr. Fox, had often invited me to your house, I would go there one morning. When I came to the house, I knocked, etc., but no one answered. When I opened the door, over the hall was written, "Be bold, be bold, but not too bold." But,' said she, turning to Mr. Fox, and smiling, 'it is not so, nor it was not so.' Then she pursues the rest of the story, concluding at every turn with, 'It is not so, nor it was not so,' till she comes to the room full of dead bodies, when Mr. Fox took up the burden of the tale, and said, 'It is not so, nor it was not so, and God forbid it should be so;' which he continues to repeat at every subsequent turn of the dreadful story, till she comes to the circumstance of his cutting off the young lady's hand; when, upon his saying, as usual, 'It is not so, nor it was not so, and God forbid it should be so,' Lady Mary retorts, 'But it is so, and it was so, and here the hand

I have to show,' at the same time producing the hand and bracelet from her lap: whereupon, the guests drew their swords, and instantly cut Mr. Fox into a thousand pieces."

224. *To fetch me in.* To entrap me into a confession, or, we might say, "to draw me out."

226. *Spoke.* Benedick means that he spoke his mind when he said "God forbid it should be so!"

238. *In the force of his will.* "Warburton's professional eye first detected the allusion here to heresy, as defined in scholastic divinity; according to which it was not merely heterodox opinion, but a wilful adherence to such opinion. The subject was a familiar one in Shakespeare's day" (White).

241. *Recheat.* Notes sounded on the horn to call off the hounds. *Winded* = blown. The meaning is, I will not wear a horn on my forehead which the huntsman may blow (Johnson).

243. *Baldrick.* A *baldrick* was a belt, girdle, or sash, sometimes a sword-belt; generally passed round one side of the neck and under the opposite arm. Turbervile, in his *Book of Hunting*, ed. 1611, gives a figure of a huntsman with his horn hanging from a baldrick worn in that way. Sylvester (*Du Bartas*) calls the zodiac "heaven's baldrick." Cf. Spenser, *Prothalamion*: —

> "That like the twins of Jove, they seem'd in sight,
> Which decke the Bauldricke of the Heavens bright."

The *invisibility* of the horns of the cuckold is often alluded to by the old writers.

245. *Fine.* End, conclusion. For the play on the word, cf. *Ham.* v. 1. 115: "The fine of his fines."

253. *A ballad-maker's pen.* Referred to contemptuously as a worthless instrument.

257. *Argument.* Subject (that is, for satire). Cf. *M. N. D.* iii. 2. 242: —

> "If you have any pity, grace, or manners,
> You would not make me such an argument;"

and 1 *Hen. IV.* ii. 2. 100: "it would be argument for a week, laughter for a month, and a good jest for ever."

258. *Like a cat.* Shooting at a cat hung up in a bottle or a basket was one of the "manly sports" of the olden time. Steevens quotes *Warres, or the Peace is Broken:* "arrowes flew faster than they did at a catte in a basket;" and *Cornu-copiæ*, 1623: "bowmen bold, which at a cat do shoot."

260. *Adam.* Generally regarded as an allusion to Adam Bell, an outlaw whose fame as an archer is celebrated in a ballad which may be found in Percy's *Reliques.* Collier thinks the meaning may be that the person who makes the first hit is compared to Adam, "the first man."

262. *In time*, etc. The line is taken from *The Spanish Tragedy*, where it reads, "In time the savage bull sustains the yoke." It had appeared even earlier in Watson's *Passionate Centurie of Love*, 1582. In the original copy (*MS. Harl.* 3277) it reads, "In tyme the bull is brought to beare the yoake," but it was afterwards printed "weare the yoake." Halliwell-Phillipps cites Ovid, *Tristia*, iv. 6. 1: "Tempore ruricolae patiens fit taurus aratri;" and *De Arte Amandi*, i. 471: "Tempore difficiles veniunt ad aratra juvenci."

272. *In Venice.* Venice was then "the capital of pleasure and intrigue," as Paris is now. Cf. Greene, *Never Too Late:* "this great city of Venice is holden Loves Paradice."

274. *You will temporize*, etc. You will come to terms in the course of time. Cf. *T. and C.* iv. 4. 6: "If I could temporize with my affection," etc. Furness suggests the possibility that S. coined the word *temperize*, and that the meaning may be, "You will become attempered by the hours, your temper will change and become more pliant and yielding."

281. *Tuition.* Guardianship; the etymological meaning. S. uses the word nowhere else.

283. *The sixth of July.* "Old Midsummer Day, an appropriate date for such Midsummer madness" (Wright).

286. *Guarded.* Faced, bordered. *Guards* were trimmings or facings of lace or embroidery. Cf. *M. of V.* ii. 2. 164: —

> "Give him a livery
> More guarded than his fellows';"

*Hen. VIII.* prol. 16: "In a long motley coat guarded with yellow;" *L. L. L.* iv. 3. 58: "O, rhymes are guards on wanton Cupid's hose," etc.

288. *Flout old ends.* Make sport of old endings of letters, like those just quoted by Claudio and Don Pedro. Reed cites Barnaby Googe's dedication to the first edition of *Palingenius*, 1560: "And thus committyng your Ladiship with all yours to the tuicion of the most mercifull God, I ende. From Staple Inne at London, the eighte and twenty of March." Malone adds Drayton's ending of a letter to Drommond of Hawthornden, in 1619: "And so wishing you all happiness, I commend you to God's tuition, and rest your assured friend." Cf. *R. of L.* 1308, where Lucrece ends her letter thus: —

> "So I commend me from our house in grief;
> My woes are tedious, though my words are brief."

*Examine your conscience.* "Examine if your sarcasms do not touch yourself" (Johnson).

291. *Thine to teach.* Ready to be taught by you.

296. *Affect.* Love. Cf. *T. G. of V.* iii. 1. 82: —

> "There is a lady in Verona here
> Whom I affect," etc.

297. *Went onward.* Started.

305. *To wars,* —. Don Pedro interrupts Claudio in his fine-twisted story.

309. *Break with her.* Broach the subject to her. Cf. *T. G. of V.* i. 3. 44: "now will we break with him;" *Hen. VIII.* v. 1. 47: "Have broken with the king," etc. S. uses *break to* in the same sense; as in 326 just below. He also has *break with* = break one's

word to; as in *M. W.* iii. 2. 57: "we have appointed to dine with Mistress Anne, and I would not break with her for more money than I 'll speak of."

315. *Salv'd.* Palliated. Cf. *Cor.* iii. 2. 70:—

> "you may salve so,
> Not what is dangerous present, but the loss
> Of what is past."

*Treatise.* Discourse, talk. Cf. *V. and A.* 774: "Your treatise makes me like you worse and worse;" *Mach.* v. 5. 12: "a dismal treatise" (that is, tale).

317. *The fairest grant,* etc. "The best boon is that which answers the necessities of the case" (Staunton); or *what will serve is fit,* as the next line gives it.

318. *'T is once.* Once for all. In *C. of E.* iii. 1. 89, "Once this" = this much is certain.

321. *I will assume thy part,* etc. Where is this spoken? In the next scene Antonio tells Leonato that a servant of his had overheard the conversation in an alley in his orchard; and in the *next* scene Borachio tells John that *he* had overheard it from behind an arras in the house. Are we to suppose an interval of time between the first and second scenes of this act? Or were there two conversations between the Prince and Claudio on this subject? Or is it an instance of the poet's frequent carelessness in the minor parts of his plot? Probably this last is the true explanation.

323. *Unclasp my heart.* Cf. *T. N.* i. 4. 13:—

> "I have unclasp'd
> To thee the book even of my secret soul."

See also *W. T.* iii. 2. 168.

324. *Take her hearing prisoner,* etc. Cf. *Cymb.* i. 6. 103: "Takes prisoner the wild motion of mine eye."

326. *After.* Afterwards. Cf. *Temp.* ii. 2. 10: "And after bite me," etc.

328. *Presently.* See on 88 above.

Scene II. — 2. *Your son.* This is inconsistent with v. i. 289–291, where his "only heir" is said to be a daughter.

4. *Dreamt of.* We should now say "have dreamt of." Cf. *Hen. V.* iv. 7. 58: "I was not angry since I came to France." See also *Cymb.* iv. 2. 66, iv. 2. 190, *A. and C.* i. 3. 1, etc.

6. *They.* S. uses *news* both as singular and as plural. Cf. *Temp.* v. 1. 221, *Rich. II.* iii. 4. 74, 82, *Cor.* i. 1. 4, etc., with *Hen. VIII.* ii. 2. 39, *Oth.* ii. 2. 7, etc. See also ii. 1. 171 below: "these ill news;" and v. 2. 101: "this news."

9. *Thick-pleached.* Thickly interwoven. Cf. iii. 1. 7 below: "the pleached bower;" *A. and C.* iv. 14. 73: "with pleach'd arms" (that is, folded arms).

10. *Orchard* = garden; the only meaning in S.

11. *Discovered.* Revealed. Cf. *Lear*, ii. 1. 68: "I threaten'd to discover him," etc.

14. *By the top.* Cf. *A. W.* v. 3. 39: "Let 's take the instant by the forward top." For *break with*, see on i. 1. 309 above.

20. *Till it appear itself.* Till it appear as a reality.

22. *Withal.* With it. Cf. *T. G. of V.* ii. 7. 67: "he will scarce be pleas'd withal," etc.

24. *Cousins.* "Cousins were anciently enrolled among the dependants, if not domestics, of great families, such as that of Leonato. Petruchio, while intent on the subjection of Katherine [*T. of S.* iv. 1. 154] calls out, in terms imperative, for his 'cousin Ferdinand'" (Steevens).

25. *Cry you mercy.* Beg your pardon; as often.

Scene III. — 1. *The good-year.* Of unknown origin, according to the *New Eng. Dict.* It came to be used as a "meaningless expletive." The usual etymology (from *goujère*) is inadmissible. Cf. *M. W.* i. 4. 129, *Lear*, v. 3. 24, etc. The expression was often used literally; as in Holyband's *French Littleton*, ed. 1609: "God give you a good morrow and a good yeare, — *Dieu vous doit bon jour et bon an.*"

4. *Breeds.* Theobald, followed by most of the editors, added *it;* but it is not necessary (Furness).

11. *Born under Saturn.* An astrological allusion. Those born under Saturn were supposed to be of a phlegmatic or *saturnine* disposition. Cf. *T. A.* ii. 3. 31: —

> "though Venus govern your desires,
> Saturn is dominator over mine."

See also 2 *Hen. IV.* ii. 4. 286. *Goest about* = dost undertake; as often. Cf. *Romans*, x. 3 and *Psalms*, xxxviii. 12 (Prayer-Book).

12. *Mortifying.* Used in the literal sense = killing. Cf. *M. of V.* i. 1. 82: "mortifying groans." See also *Hen. V.* i. 1. 26.

*I cannot hide*, etc. "This is one of our author's natural touches. An envious and unsocial mind, too proud to give pleasure and too sullen to receive it, always endeavours to hide its malignity from the world and from itself under the plainness of simple honesty or the dignity of haughty independence" (Johnson).

14. *Stomach.* Appetite; as in ii. 3. 257 below. See also *T. G. of V.* i. 2. 68, *T. of S.* iv. 1. 161, etc.

17. *Claw.* Tickle, flatter. The origin of the metaphor is illustrated by 2 *Hen. IV.* ii. 4. 282. See also *L. L. L.* iv. 2. 66. Reed quotes Wilson, *Discourse upon Usury*, 1572: "therefore I will clawe him, and saye well might he fare, and godds blessing have he too. For the more he speaketh, the better it itcheth, and maketh better for me."

19. *Controlment.* Constraint. Cf. *T. A.* ii. 1. 68 and *K. John*, i. 1. 20.

21. *Grace.* Favour; as in ii. 3. 29 below: "one woman shall not come in my grace," etc.

25. *Canker.* Canker-rose, or dog-rose. It is similarly contrasted with the cultivated rose in *Sonn.* 54. 5: —

> "The canker-blooms have full as deep a dye
> As the perfumed tincture of the roses;"

and in 1 *Hen. IV.* i. 3. 176: —

"To put down Richard, that sweet lovely rose,
And plant this thorn, this canker, Bolingbroke?"

26. *Blood.* Disposition, temper. Cf. 2 *Hen. IV.* iv. 4. 38: "When you perceive his blood inclin'd to mirth," etc.

27. *Carriage.* Bearing, deportment. Cf. *C. of E.* iii. 2. 14: "Teach sin the carriage of a holy saint," etc.

*Rob love from any.* Cf. *Sonn.* 35. 14: "that sweet thief which sourly robs from me;" and *Rich. II.* i. 3. 173: "Which robs my tongue from breathing native breath."

30. *I am trusted,* etc. Furness remarks: "Let it not be hereafter said that S. never mixes his metaphors. A bird *in a cage* with a *clog* on its leg to keep it a prisoner, and a *muzzle* on its beak to keep it from *biting*, would be a sight for gods and men." S. certainly has not a few mixed metaphors, though some that have been called so (like "taking up arms against a sea of troubles," etc.), are not really such. For a bad instance, see *Rich. II.* iii. 3. 96 fol.

37. *For I use it only.* For I make nothing else my counsellor.

40. *I came.* I have come. See on i. 2. 4 above.

44. *Model.* Ground plan. Cf. 2 *Hen. IV.* i. 3. 42:—

"When we mean to build,
We first survey the plot, then draw the model;
And when we see the figure of the house,
Then must we rate the cost of the erection;
Which if we find outweighs ability,
What do we then but draw anew the model," etc.

45. *What is he for a fool?* What sort of fool is he? Staunton quotes Jonson, *Every Man out of his Humour*, iii. 6: "What is he for a creature?" and *Ram Alley*, iv. 2: "What is he for a man?"

50. *Proper.* For the ironical use, cf. iv. 1. 309 below: "a proper saying!" See also *Hen. VIII.* i. 1. 98, *Macb.* iii. 4. 60, etc. And for the contemptuous *squire*, cf. 1 *Hen. VI.* iv. 1. 23, *Oth.* iv. 2. 145, etc.

*And who, and who?* This has been variously explained, and

changes have been suggested. I have always taken the repetition as a contemptuous affectation of eagerness.

54. *March-chick.* That is, a chicken hatched in March; a sneer at his *forwardness.*

56. *Entertained for.* Employed as. Cf. *T. of A.* iv. 3. 496: "To entertain me as your steward still;" *Lear*, iii. 6. 83: "You, sir, I entertain for one of my hundred," etc.

57. *Smoking a musty room* is suggestive of the uncleanly habits of the time. Steevens quotes Burton, *Anat. of Melancholy:* "the smooke of juniper is in great request with us at Oxford, to sweeten our chambers." In a letter from the Lords of the Council in the reign of Edward VI. we are told that Lord Paget's house was so small that "after one month it would wax unsavery for hym to contynue in;" and in the correspondence of the Earl of Shrewsbury with Lord Burleigh, during the confinement of Mary Queen of Scots at Sheffield Castle, in 1572, we learn that she was to be removed for five or six days "to klense her chambar, being kept very unklenly." Again, in a memoir written by Anne Countess of Dorset, in 1603, we read: "we all went to Tibbals to see the Kinge, who used my mother and my aunt very gratiouslie; but we all saw a great chaunge betweene the fashion of the Court as it was now, and of y^t^ in y^e^ Queene's, for we were all lowzy by sittinge in S^r^ Thomas Erskin's chamber." I may add *T. of S.* ind. 1. 49: "And burn sweet wood to make the lodging sweet."

*Me.* The "ethical dative," so called.

58. *Sad.* Serious, earnest. See on i. 1. 184 above.

59. *Arras.* Tapestry hangings, so called from Arras in France. Cf. *Ham.* ii. 2. 163, iii. 3. 28, etc.

63. *Displeasure.* "The hostility to all the world which he has just expressed" (Furness).

*Start-up.* Used by S. nowhere else. *Upstart* occurs as a noun in 1 *Hen. VI.* iv. 7. 87, and as an adjective in *Rich. II.* ii. 3. 122.

"In the character of the chief villain of the drama, the poet has wholly departed from the plot of Bandello's tale, which furnished

him with the outline of the story. The novelist had ascribed the base deception, on which his story turns, to the revenge of a rejected lover, who, at the catastrophe, makes some amends for his guilt, by remorse and frank confession. Shakespeare has chosen to pourtray a less common and obvious, but unhappily too true character, — one of sullen malignity, to whom the happiness or success of others is sufficient reason for the bitterness of hatred, and cause enough to prompt to injury and crime. This character has much the appearance of being the original conception and rough sketch of that wayward, dark disposition, which the poet afterwards painted more elaborately, with some variation of circumstances and temperament, in his 'honest Iago'" (Verplanck).

66. *Sure.* To be relied on. Cf. *Cor.* i. 1. 176 : —

> "you are no surer, no,
> Than is the coal of fire upon the ice,
> Or hailstone in the sun."

68. *Cheer.* Festive enjoyment. The word originally meant *face;* as in *M. of V.* iii. 2. 314, etc. Cf. Spenser, *F. Q.* i. 1. 2 : "But of his cheere did seeme too solemne sad;" Dryden, *Hind and Panther,* iii. 437 : "Till frowning skies began to change their cheer," etc.

70. *Go prove.* Furness compares 1 *Thessalonians,* v. 21 : "Prove all things."

---

## ACT II

Scene I. — 4. *Heart-burned.* "The pain commonly called the *heart-burn* proceeds from an *acid* humour in the stomach, and is therefore properly enough imputed to *tart* looks" (Johnson). Cf. Falstaff's jesting use of the word in 1 *Hen. IV.* iii. 3. 59.

20. *Shrewd.* Shrewish. *Curst* has the same meaning, and the two words are used interchangeably and in combination. In the *T. of S.* the heroine is called "Katherine the curst" (i. 2. 128) or

"Kate the curst" (ii. 1. 87), and "curst and shrewd" (i. 1. 185, i. 2. 70).

23. *God sends*, etc. An old English proverb. Cf. Ray, *Proverbs*: "Curst cowes have short horns, *Dat Deus immiti cornua curta bovi*."

28. *Just.* Just so, exactly so. Cf. *A. Y. L.* iii. 2. 281: "Yes, just." See also *M. for M.* iii. 1. 68, *Hen. V.* iii. 7. 158, etc.

31. *In the woollen.* That is, between the blankets, without sheets. Capell thought it meant "in my shroud;" woollen being used for shrouds occasionally as early as the 16th century.

41. *Bear-herd.* The early eds. have "Berrord," which probably indicates the common pronunciation. The folio has "Beare-heard" in *T. of S.* ind. ii. 21 and 2 *Hen. IV.* i. 2. 192. In 2 *Hen. IV.* v. 1. 149 it has "Berard," and in 210 "Bearard." These are the only passages in which the word occurs. The *apes* rode on the bear led about by the *bear-herd*. For the idea that old maids led apes into hell, cf. *T. of S.* ii. 1. 34.

50. *Merry.* In the time of S. often = joyful, "without the notion of levity that now attaches to it" (Wright). Cf. *Psalms*, xlvii. 5 (Prayer-Book version): "God is gone up with a merry noise."

54. *Curtsy.* The same word as *courtesy*, which some eds. give here. The quarto has "cursie" in both instances in this speech, and Halliwell-Phillipps prints "cursey," which he says is "a genuine archaic form of the word *courtesy*." See also on iv. 1. 319 below.

62. *To be overmastered with.* To have as master, to be ruled by. *With* = by; as often. Cf. v. 1. 116 below. *To make an account* = to render an account.

64. *I'll none.* Cf. *M. N. D.* iii. 2. 169: "keep thy Hermia; I will none;" *A. and C.* ii. 5. 9: "I 'll none now," etc.

65. *Match.* Marry. Cf. *T. N.* i. 3. 116: "she 'll none o' the count; she 'll not match above her degree," etc.

72. *Important.* Importunate. Cf. *C. of E.* v. 1. 138: "your important letters;" *A. W.* iii. 7. 21: "'his important blood." In

*Lear*, iv. 4. 26, the quartos have "important," the folio "importun'd." S. seems to have confused the derivation of the words.

*Measure.* Moderation, a proper limit; with a play on the other meaning of a dance, as in *L. L. L.* iv. 3. 384 and *Rich. II.* iii. 4. 7.

75. *Cinque-pace.* A kind of dance, as the context shows. Cf. *T. N.* i. 3. 139. The Cambridge ed. quotes Marston, *Insatiate Countess*, ii. : —

> "Thinke of me as of the man
> Whose dancing dayes you see are not yet done.
> *Len.* Yet, you sinke a pace, sir."

The *cinque-pace* was much like the *galliard*, for which see *Hen. V.* i. 2. 252 : a nimble galliard," etc. Sir John Davies, in his *Orchestra*, describes the dance thus : —

> "But, for more divers and more pleasing show,
> A swift and wandring daunce she did invent,
> With passages uncertaine, to and fro,
> Yet with a certaine answere and consent
> To the quicke musicke of the instrument.
> Five was the number of the musicks feet,
> Which still the daunce did with five paces meet.
>
> "A gallant daunce, that lively doth bewray
> A spirit, and a vertue masculine,
> Impatient that her house on earth should stay,
> Since she herselfe is fiery and divine:
> Oft doth she make her body upward fline;
> With lofty turnes and capriols in the ayre,
> Which with the lusty tunes accordeth faire."

Halliwell-Phillipps quotes *Lanquettes Chronicle:* "About this time [1541] a new trade of daunsyng galiardes upon five paces, and vaunting of horses, was brought into the realme by Italians, which shortly was exercised commonly of all yonge men, and the old facion lefte."

77. *Mannerly.* Also used adverbially (as adjectives in *-ly* often are) in *M. of V.* ii. 9. 100 and *Cymb.* iii. 6. 92.

78. *Ancientry.* "The port and behaviour of old age" (Schmidt); or perhaps = antique fashion. It means old people in *W. T.* iii. 3. 63: "wronging the ancientry."

94. *Favour.* Face, look; as in iii. 3. 19 below. Cf. *M. for M.* iv. 2. 34: "for surely, sir, a good favour you have, but that you have a hanging look," etc.

*Defend.* Forbid, like the Fr. *défendre.* Cf. iv. 2. 20 below. See also *Oth.* i. 3. 267: "And heaven defend your good souls, that you think," etc. *The case* = the mask, which seems to have been an ugly one.

96. *Philemon's roof.* An allusion to the story of Philemon and Baucis in Ovid. Cf. *A. Y. L.* iii. 3. 10: "worse than Jove in a thatched house." This and the next two speeches form a rhymed couplet in the fourteen-syllable measure of Golding's translation of Ovid. For *Jove* the folio misprints "Love."

98. *Well, I would,* etc. This speech, with the next two here assigned to Balthazar, is given to *Benedick* in the early eds. Theobold made the correction.

101. *Which is one?* We should now say "*What* is one?"

108. *Clerk.* The reader of responses in the English church service; suggested here by Balthazar's "Amen." Cf. *Sonn.* 85. 6: "And like unlettered clerk still cry 'Amen;'" *Rich. II.* iv. 1. 173: "Am I both priest and clerk? Well then, Amen."

112. *At a word.* In a word, or briefly. Cf. *M. W.* i. 1. 109: "at a word, he hath, believe me;" *Cor.* i. 3. 122: "No, at a word, madam," etc.

115. *Do him so ill-well.* That is, mimic his bad manner so well. Steevens compares *M. of V.* i. 2. 63: "a better bad habit of frowning;" but, as Furness notes, the meaning there is "a better bad-habit," not "a better-bad habit."

116. *Dry hand.* Formerly regarded as the mark of a cold nature. Cf. *T. N.* i. 3. 77. *Up and down* = thoroughly, exactly. Cf. *T. G. of V.* ii. 3. 32: "here's my mother's breath up and down;" *T. of S.* iv. 3. 89: "What, up and down, carv'd like an

apple-tart?" *T. A.* v. 2. 107: "For up and down she doth resemble thee."

122. *There 's an end.* There is no more to be said about it. Cf. *Hen. V.* ii. 1. 11, iii. 2. 153, etc. *There an end* is used in the same sense; as in *T. of S.* v. 2. 98, *Rich II.* v. 1. 69, etc.

125. *Nor will you not.* The double negative is common in S.

128. '*Hundred Merry Tales.*' A popular jest-book of the time, an imperfect copy of which was discovered and reprinted in 1815.

130. *What 's he?* Who 's he? See on i. 1. 35 above.

136. *Only his gift is.* His talent is only. For the transposition, cf. *J. C.* v. 4. 12: "Only I yield to die," etc. *Impossible slanders* are "such as, from their absurdity and impossibility, bring their own confutation with them" (Johnson).

139. *He both pleases*, etc. "By his impious jests, she insinuates, he *pleased* libertines; and by his *devising slanders* of them, he angered them" (Warburton).

141. *In the fleet.* In the company; and the figure is carried out in *boarded* = accosted. Cf. *Ham.* ii. 2. 170: "I 'll board him presently," etc.

147. *Partridge wing.* Formerly considered the most delicate part of the bird. It is doubtful whether there is any reference to that fact here, though the meaning may be that his appetite will be so entirely gone that not even such a titbit would tempt him.

161. *Near.* Intimate with. Cf. *Rich. III.* iii. 4. 14: "you and he are near in love;" 2 *Hen. IV.* v. 1. 81: "I would humour his men with the imputation of being near their master," etc.

162. *Enamoured.* Followed by *on* also in 1 *Hen. IV.* v. 2. 70 and 2 *Hen. IV.* i. 3. 102; by *of* in *M. N. D.* iii. 1. 141, iv. 1. 82, and *R. and J.* iii. 3. 2.

168. *To-night.* Perhaps referring to *sworc*, as Wright thinks; but the meaning may be that he would gladly marry her to-night if it were possible.

171. *News.* For the number, see on i. 2. 6 above.

175. *Use.* Probably the "subjunctive used optatively or imperatively." Furness prefers to take it as the indicative, or "a simple statement of fact."

178. *Faith melteth into blood.* Fidelity is melted in the heat of passion. For *blood* in this sense, cf. ii. 3. 163 and iv. 1. 57 below. See also *A. Y. L.* v. 4. 59, *A. W.* iii. 7. 21, etc.

179. *Proof.* Experience. Cf. *J. C.* ii. 1. 21 : "'t is a common proof;" *Ham.* iv. 7. 113 : "passages of proof," etc.

180. *Which I,* etc. It may be a question whether this is an Alexandrine or a normal line with two extra syllables, like 171 above.

185. *Willow.* For other allusions to the willow as the emblem of unhappy love, see *M. of V.* v. 1. 10, 3 *Hen. VI.* iii. 3. 228, iv. 1. 100, *Oth.* iv. 3. 28 fol., v. 2. 248, etc. Cf. Spenser, *F. Q.* i. 1. 9 : "The Willow worne of forlorne Paramours;" Lyly, *Sappho and Phao,* ii. 4 : "Enjoy thy care in covert; weare willow in thy hat, and bayes in thy heart;" Swan, *Speculum Mundi,* 1635 : "it is yet a custom that he which is deprived of his love must wear a willow garland." Fuller, in his *Worthies,* describes the willow as "a sad tree, whereof such who have lost their love, make their mourning garlands, and we know what exiles hung up their harps upon such dolefull supporters. The twiggs hereof are physick to drive out the folly of children," etc.

186. *County.* Count; the reading of the quarto here and in 352 below. The folio has "Count" here, and "Counte" there, but "Counties" in iv. 1. 315. *County* is also found in *M. of V.* i. 2. 49, *A. W.* iii. 7. 22, *T. N.* i. 5. 320, and often in *R. and J.* Cf. Warner, *Albions England:* "Horne and Egmond, counties brave."

187. *An usurer's chain.* Gold chains were often worn by wealthy citizens in the poet's time, as they are now on public occasions by the aldermen of London (Reed).

192. *Drovier.* The spelling of both quarto and folio; a form used in the 16th and 17th centuries.

205. *Though bitter.* The reading of the early eds., changed by

Johnson to "the bitter." No attempt to explain it as it stands seems to me at all satisfactory. In the folio it is printed "base (though bitter);" and it has occurred to me that the meaning may possibly be, "base (though bitter to me, in spite of the fact that, being base and therefore contemptible, I ought not to mind it)," or, more concisely, "base (though bitter nevertheless)." One must often "read between the lines" in S. and sometimes even between the words in a line.

206. *Puts the world*, etc. Assumes to represent the world, and thus reports me. For *gives me out*, cf. *A. W.* ii. 3. 16: "That gave him out incurable," etc.

212. *A lodge in a warren.* The hut occupied by a watchman in a rabbit warren. Steevens remarks: "A parallel thought occurs in the first chapter of *Isaiah*, where the prophet, describing the desolation of Judah, says, 'The daughter of Zion is left as a cottage in a vineyard, as a lodge in a garden of cucumbers.' I am informed that near Aleppo these lonely buildings are still made use of, it being necessary that the fields where water-melons, cucumbers, etc., are raised should be regularly watched. I learn from Tho. Newton's *Herball to the Bible*, 1587, that 'so soone as the cucumbers, etc., be gathered, these lodges are abandoned of the watchmen and keepers, and no more frequented.' From these forsaken buildings, it should seem, the prophet takes his comparison."

233. *Hath a quarrel to you.* Cf. *T. N.* iii. 4. 248: "I am sure no man hath any quarrel to me;" *Cor.* iv. 5. 133: "Had we no quarrel else to Rome," etc.

235. *Wronged.* "Injured by being misrepresented, slandered" (Wright). Cf. *Rich. III.* iv. 4. 211: "Wrong not her birth, she is of royal blood;" *Temp.* i. 2. 443. "I fear you have done yourself some wrong" (in representing yourself as King of Naples).

236. *Misused.* Abused, reviled. Cf. *A. Y. L.* iv. 1. 205: "you have simply misused our sex," etc.

237. *But with.* With but, with only. Transpositions of "adverbs of limitation" (*but, only, yet*, etc.) are very frequent in S.

238. *My very visor*, etc. Steevens notes a similar thought in Statius, *Thebaid*, v. 658: —

> "ipsa insanire videtur
> Sphynx galeae custos."

242. *Impossible conveyance.* "Incredible dexterity" (Staunton). Changes have been made in the text, but none is necessary. The meaning, as Malone remarks, is "with a rapidity equal to that of *jugglers*, who appear to perform *impossibilities*." *Conveyance* was often used in the sense of sleight of hand, trickery. Cf. 3 *Hen. VI.* iii. 3. 160: "thy sly conveyance," etc.

243. *A man at a mark.* I take this to mean a man in the position of a mark or target, though it does not seem necessary to read "as a mark," as Keightley proposed. Some refer it to the danger of being near the mark when the shooting is bad, as the *marker* had to be; and Furness approves this explanation. If that were the meaning we should expect "shooting at *it*" rather than "at *me*."

244. *She speaks poniards.* Cf. *Ham.* iii. 2. 414: "I will speak daggers to her."

246. *Terminations.* Terms, words; used by S. only here.

249. *Have made Hercules have turned.* Cf. *Ham.* v. 1. 268: "I hop'd thou shouldst have been my Hamlet's wife," etc. The error is still common.

252. *Ate.* The goddess of discord. Cf. *K. John*, ii. 1. 63: "An Ate, stirring him to blood and strife;" *J. C.* iii. 1. 271: "With Ate by his side, come hot from hell," etc.

253. *Some scholar*, etc. Because Latin, the language of the church, was used in exorcisms. See *Ham.* i. 1. 42: "Thou art a scholar; speak to it, Horatio."

254. *A man may live as quiet*, etc. That is, to live in hell would be as quiet as to live in a sanctuary, compared with living where she is, and people sin on purpose in order to escape her in that way.

263. *Toothpicker.* S. also uses *toothpick;* as in *A. W.* i. 1. 171, *K. John,* i. 1. 190, etc.

265. *Prester John's foot.* Prester or Presbyter John was a mythical Christian king of India. Some placed his dominions in Abyssinia; Sir John Mandeville locates them in an island called Pentexoire. The difficulty of getting access to him is referred to in *Hudibras:*—

> "While like the mighty Prester John,
> Whose person none dares look upon,
> But is preserv'd in close disguise
> From being made cheap to vulgar eyes."

*The great Cham* was the Khan of Tartary. He is associated with Prester John in the old drama of *Fortunatus:*—

> "And then I 'll revel it with Prester John,
> Or banquet with great Cham of Tartary."

Steevens quotes Cartwright, *The Siege,* 1651: "bid me take the Parthian king by the beard; or draw an eye-tooth from the jaw royal of the Persian monarch." Cf. the old romance of *Huon of Bourdeaux;* "Thou must goe to the citie of Babylon to the Admiral Gaudisse, to bring me thy hand full of the heare of his beard, and foure of his greatest teeth. Alas, my lord, (quoth the Barrons,) we see well you desire greatly his death, when you charge him with such a message."

266. *The Pigmies.* A race of dwarfs fabled to dwell beyond Mount Imaus in India. Their wars with the cranes are celebrated in a poem ascribed to Homer. Cf. Milton, *P. L.* i. 575:—

> "that small infantry
> Warr'd on by cranes;"

and *Id.* i. 780:—

> "like that Pygmean race
> Beyond the Indian mount."

276. *Use.* Interest, "usance" (*M. of V.* i. 3. 46, 109, 142). Cf. *V. and A.* 768: "But gold that's put to use more gold

begets;" *Sonn.* 134. 10: "Thou usurer, that put'st forth all to use," etc.

291. *Civil count.* Some eds. print "civil, count." The meaning of *civil* is the same in either case, and is perhaps best illustrated by Cotgrave's definition of *aigre-douce* as a "civile orange, or orange that is betweene sweet and sower." Cf. Nash, *Four Letters Confuted*, 1592: "For the order of my life, it is as civil as an orange." There is an obvious play upon *civil* and *Seville*.

292. *Jealous complexion.* Cf. the use of *yellowness* = jealousy, in *M. W.* i. 3. 111.

293. *Blazon.* Description, record. Cf. *Ham.* i. 5. 21: "this eternal blazon" (this unfolding of the mysteries of eternity).

294. *Conceit.* Conception, idea. Cf. *M. of V.* iii. 4. 2:—

> "You have a noble and a true conceit
> Of godlike amity," etc.

302. *Cue.* Still familiar as a stage term. For its literal sense, see *M. W.* iii. 3. 39, *M. N. D.* iii. 1. 78, 102, etc.

311. *Poor fool.* Formerly an expression of tenderness. Cf. *T. G. of V.* iv. 4. 98, *T. N.* v. 1. 377, 3 *Hen. VI.* ii. 5. 36, etc.

315. *Good Lord, for alliance!* This seems to mean "Heaven send me a husband!" (said sportively, of course), as Staunton explains it; or "Good Lord, how many alliances are forming!" as Boswell gives it. Furness is inclined to agree with Boswell, and suggests that *alliance* may be plural. See p. 137 above. *To go to the world* meant to marry; perhaps originally in distinction from going into the church, where celibacy was the rule. Cf. *A. W.* i. 3. 20: "If I may have your ladyship's good will to go to the world," etc. So *a woman of the world* = a married woman, in *A. Y. L.* v. 3. 5.

316. *Sunburnt.* Apparently = "homely," as Steevens explains it. Cf. *T. and C.* i. 3. 282:—

> "The Grecian dames are sunburnt and not worth
> The splinter of a lance."

Wright thinks there is possibly an allusion to the *Song of Songs*, i. 6, hinting at "the unsheltered condition of an unmarried woman who had no home of her own."

317. *Heigh-ho for a husband!* The title of an old ballad, preserved in the Pepysian Collection, Magdalene College, Cambridge (Malone). Cf. iii. 4. 53 below.

327. *Matter.* Sense. Cf. *A. Y. L.* ii. 1. 68: "For then he 's full of matter;" *Ham.* ii. 2. 95: "More matter with less art;" *Lear*, iv. 6. 178: "O matter and impertinency mix'd!"

339. *The melancholy element.* We have many allusions in S. to the old notion that all things were composed of the four elements, earth, air, fire, and water. Cf. *T. N.* ii. 3. 10, *Sonn.* 44. 13, 45. 5, *A. and C.* v. 2. 292, etc. But here *element* may be simply = constituent (Furness).

341. *Sad.* Serious. See on i. 1. 184 above.

342. *Unhappiness.* Theobald changed this to "an happiness;" but Seymour explains the passage thus: "She hath often dreamed of unhappiness, which yet was so short-lived that presently she was merry again and waked herself with laughing."

344. *Hear tell.* "This form of speech, which is now never heard in Old England, except perhaps in the remotest rural districts, is in common use in New England" (White). Wright, on the other hand, says that it is "rather a colloquialism of common occurrence than a rare provincialism" in England.

352. *County.* See on 186 above.

*To go to church.* Cf. *M. of V.* iii. 2. 305: "First go with me to church and call me wife," etc.

357. *A just seven-night.* An exact week. Cf. *M. of V.* iv. 1. 327: "a just pound."

360. *Breathing.* Interval, delay. Cf. *R. of L.* 1720: "Untimely breathings."

363. *Mountain of affection.* Johnson was sorely troubled by this colloquial expression, and suggested "mooting." Steevens and Malone think that S. may have written it, as he has "many

phrases equally harsh." The discussion fills almost a page of the *Variorum* of 1821.

369. *Watchings.* Lying awake at night. Cf. *Macb.* v. 1. 12: "To receive at once the benefit of sleep and do the effects of watching."

376. *Strain.* Family, lineage. Cf. *Hen. V.* ii. 4. 51: "he is bred out of that bloody strain;" *J. C.* v. 1. 59: "the noblest of thy strain," etc. See also Spenser, *F. Q.* iv. 8. 33: "Sprung of the auncient stocke of Princes straine;" *Id.* v. 9. 32: "yborne of heavenly strene;" *Id.* vi. 6. 9: "bred of hellish strene." *Approved* = proved, tried. Cf. iv. 1. 45 below: "an approved wanton;" also 301: "approved in the height a villain," etc.

381. *Queasy.* Squeamish, fastidious. Cf. *A. and C.* iii. 6. 20: "queasy with his insolence" (that is, sick of it); *Lear*, ii. 1. 19: "of queasy question" (= nice question).

Scene II. — 1. *Shall marry.* Is to marry. Cf. *A. Y. L.* ii. 4. 88, *J. C.* i. 3. 87, etc.

5. *Medicinable.* Medicinal. Cf. *T. and C.* i. 3. 91: "Sol . . . whose medicinable eye;" *Oth.* v. 2. 351: "medicinable gum" ("medicinal" in quartos), etc.

*Displeasure to him.* Cf. "a quarrel to you" in ii. 1. 213 above. We find "displeasure against" in *Temp.* iv. 1. 202, *A. Y. L.* i. 2. 90, and *A. W.* iv. 5. 80.

6. *Affection.* Inclination, wish. Whatever thwarts his wishes agrees with mine.

21. *Temper.* Compound, mix; especially with reference to poisons. Cf. *R. and J.* iii. 5. 98: —

> "Madam, if you could find out but a man
> To bear a poison, I would temper it;"

*Ham.* v. 2. 339: "It is a poison temper'd by himself;" *Cymb.* v. 5. 250: "To temper poisons for her."

24. *Estimation.* Worth, merit; as in *A. W.* v. 3. 4, etc. It is

used in a concrete sense (= thing of worth) in *T. and C.* ii. 2. 91 and *Cymb.* i. 4. 99.

25. *Stale.* Wanton, harlot; as in iv. 1. 63 below.

28. *Misuse.* Deceive. Cf. *abuse* in v. 2. 98 below: "the prince and Claudio mightily abused." *Abuse* is often used by S. in this sense, *misuse* only in the present passage.

31. *Despite.* The only instance of the verb in S.

35. *Intend.* Pretend. Cf. *R. of L.* 121: "Intending weariness with heavy spright." See also *T. of S.* iv. 1. 206, *Rich. III.* iii. 5. 8, and *T. of A.* ii. 2. 219. On the other hand, *pretend* was sometimes = intend; as in *R. of L.* 576, *T. G. of V.* ii. 6. 37, etc.

41. *Trial.* That is, verifying it by their own observation. *Instances* = proofs; as in *M. for M.* iv. 3. 134, *T. and C.* v. 2. 153, etc.

44. *Term me Claudio.* Theobald changed *Claudio* to "Borachio," but this does not seem necessary. As Malone remarks, Claudio might suppose that his rival was addressed as Claudio in consequence of a secret agreement between the guilty pair, in order to prevent suspicion if Hero should be overheard. For a long discussion of the passage, see Furness.

48. *Jealousy.* Suspicion; as often. Cf. *T. N.* ii. 3. 8, *Hen. V.* ii. 2. 126, etc.

50. *Grow this.* Let this grow.

51. *The working this.* We should now say either "working this" or "the working of this."

55. *Presently.* See on i. 1. 88 above.

Scene III. — 4. *Orchard.* Garden. See on i. 2. 10 above.

5. *I am here already.* The boy means that "his alacrity will be such that, in intention, he is gone and returned again" (Furness) Benedick affects to understand him literally.

9. *Behaviours.* The details of his behaviour (Wright).

11. *Argument.* Subject. See on i. 1. 257 above.

14. *The drum and the fife.* Associated with military life, as the *pipe and the tabor* were with sports and festivities.

16. *Ten mile.* Cf. *Macb.* v. 5. 37: "within this three mile;" and see on i. 1. 90 above.

20. *Orthography.* The abstract for the concrete. Cf. *L. L. L.* i. 2. 190: "I am sure I shall turn sonnet." See also on iii. 3. 109 below.

30. *In my grace.* Into my favour. For *grace*, see on i. 3. 26 above. *In* is often = into.

31. *I'll none.* I'll have nothing to do with her. See on ii. 1. 64 above.

*Cheapen.* Chaffer for, bid for. Cf. *Per.* iv. 6. 10: "cheapen a kiss of her." In the Shropshire dialect *cheapen* = ask the price of. Cf. Heywood, *Edward IV.*: "I see you come to cheap, and not to buy." Palsgrave gives, "I cheape, I demaunde the price of a thyng that I wolde bye."

33. *Noble . . . angel.* With a punning reference to the two coins, the *noble* and the *angel.* For the *noble*, see *Rich. II.* v. 5. 67, where there is a quibbling reference to the *royal*, another coin. That jest is said to have been borrowed from Queen Elizabeth. Mr. John Blower, in a sermon before her Majesty, first said, "My royal Queen," and a little after, "My noble Queen." Upon which says the Queen: "What! am I ten groats worse than I was?" A similar joke may be found in 1 *Hen. IV.* ii. 4. 317–321. For the *angel*, see *M. of V.* ii. 7. 56, *M. W.* i. 3. 60, etc.

34. *Her hair*, etc. Meaning, perhaps, that her hair shall be of the natural colour, not dyed according to the fashion of the time. Stubbes, in his *Anatomie of Abuses*, 1595, says: "If any have haire of her owne naturall growing, which is not faire ynough, then will they die it in divers colours." Or, possibly, when he comes to mention the hair, it occurs to him that he has no special preference for the colour, and he therefore leaves it to God. Furness suggests that he "had been quite unconsciously describing Beatrice," but, when he came to the colour of the lady's hair, "of a sudden he became

aware that he was about to name the very tint of Beatrice's, and the dangerous tendency of his heart flashed upon him." Hence the turn he gives to the sentence.

37. The quarto has here "*Enter prince, Leonato, Claudio, Musicke,*" and six lines below "*Enter Balthaser with musicke.*" The folio has only one stage-direction: "*Enter Prince, Leonato, Claudio, and Iacke Wilson.*" This shows that the folio was printed from a copy of the quarto used in the theatre, Jack Wilson probably being the singer who took the part of Balthazar. The quarto itself would appear to have been printed from a stage copy; for in iv. 2. 1 both that edition and the folio assign the speech to "*Keeper,*" doubtless a misprint for *Kemp*, who is known to have acted the part of Dogberry. The next speech is also given by both eds. to "*Cowley,*" and another speech of Verges (iv. 2. 5) is assigned to the same actor. See also on iv. 2. 1 below.

38. *How still,* etc. Cf. *M. of V.* v. 1. 56: —

> "soft stillness and the night
> Become the touches of sweet harmony."

42. *Kid-fox.* Not elsewhere found, and, if it is = young fox, "singularly inappropriate" as applied to Benedick (Furness). Warburton changed it to "hid fox," which may be what S. wrote.

45. *To slander.* The omission of *as* is common.

48. *Woo.* Solicit, urge. Cf. *A. Y. L.* i. 3. 137: "Leave me alone to woo him;" *Oth.* iii. 3. 293: "Wooed me to steal it," etc.

57. *Nothing.* The reading of the early eds. changed by Theobald to "noting;" but, as White shows, *nothing* was then pronounced *noting*, and there is here a play on the two words, as on *Goths* and *goats* in *A. Y. L.* iii. 3. 9. *Nothing* rhymes with *doting* in *Sonn.* 20. 12. I think, however, that White goes too far in assuming that we have the same pun in the title of the play. He says: "The play is *Much Ado about Nothing* only in a very vague and general sense, but *Much Ado about Noting* in one especially apt and descriptive; for the much ado is produced entirely

by noting. It begins with the noting of the Prince and Claudio, first by Antonio's man, and then by Borachio, who reveals their confidence to John; it goes on with Benedick noting the Prince, Leonato, and Claudio in the garden, and again with Beatrice noting Margaret and Ursula in the same place; the incident upon which its action turns is the noting of Borachio's interview with Margaret by the Prince and Claudio; and finally, the incident which reveals the plot is the noting of Borachio and Conrade by the Watch." But, as Furness remarks, "there is not more *noting* in this play than in many another." *Note* = observe, watch, is common in S. Cf. *A. Y. L.* iii. 2. 267: "Slink by and note him;" *T. and C.* i. 2. 251: "Mark him, note him," etc. See also in the present play i. 1. 162, iv. 1. 157, etc.

58. *Divine air!* Possibly meant to be understood as a quotation, and printed as such by some editors.

59. *Guts.* Topsell, in his *Hist. of Four-footed Beasts*, 1607, stating the uses of the sheep, gives "his guts and intrals for musicke." The word in the time of S. was not so offensive to delicacy as at present. It is used by Lyly, "who made the first attempt to polish our language;" also by Stanyhurst in his translation of Virgil, and by Chapman in his *Iliad*. Halliwell-Phillipps says: "I have seen a letter, written about a century ago, in which a lady of rank, addressing a gentleman, speaks of her *guts* with the same nonchalance with which we should now write *stomach*."

60. *Hale.* Draw; etymologically the same as *haul*, which S. does not use, unless we recognize a solitary instance in 2 *Hen. IV.* v. 5. 37, where the quarto has "halde" and the folio "hall'd." *Hale* is also the form in Milton (*P. L.* ii. 596) and in *Luke*, xii. 58 and *Acts*, viii. 3. S. uses the word fifteen times; and he apparently uses *exhale* as if it were a derivative of *hale* (= draw out), as in *Rich. III.* i. 2. 58, 166, etc. On the effect of music here, cf. *T. N.* ii. 3. 60: "a catch that will draw three souls out of one weaver."

61. *When all 's done.* After all. Cf. *M. N. D.* iii. 1. 16: "I

believe we must leave the killing out, when all is done." See also *T. N.* ii. 3. 31 and *Macb.* iii. 4. 67.

70. *Move.* Used only with plural or collective nouns. S. has it often; as in *M. of V.* i. 1. 108, *A. Y. L.* iii. 2. 278, *W. T.* i. 2. 8, iv. 4. 278, v. 2. 137, etc.

71. *Dumps.* Low spirits, melancholy; as in *T. A.* i. 1. 391, *R. and J.* iv. 5. 129, etc. It is used by S. in this sense only in the plural; but the singular is found in other writers. Cf. Harrington, *Ariosto:* "Strake them into a dumpe, and make them sad;" Hall, *Homer:* "Leaving Prince Agamemnon then in dumpe and in suspense," etc. *Dump* also meant a melancholy strain of music. Cf. *T. G. of V.* iii. 2. 85: "Tune a deploring dump." See also *R. and J.* iv. 5. 108 and *R. of L.* 1127. It was also sometimes applied to an elegy. Davies of Hereford has one entitled "A Dump upon the Death of the most noble Henrie, Earle of Pembroke."

73. *Leavy.* The regular form of the word in S. and here required by the rhyme.

81. *Bode no mischief.* The howling of a dog was deemed an ill omen. *Had as lief* is good English still.

83. *Night-raven.* Either the owl, or, as some explain it, the night-heron (*Ardea nycticorax*). It is probably the same as the "night-crow" of 3 *Hen. VI.* v. 6. 45. Cf. Milton, *L'All.* 7: "And the night-raven sings."

86. *We would have it,* etc. But we hear nothing more of it; and, as Furness notes, there are many perplexing questions about the plot of Don John and Borachio which was to be carried out on the same night.

93. *O, ay.* I suspect that this is the reply to Don Pedro's question, as Theobald pointed it. The folio and most of the modern eds. connect it with what follows.

*Stalk on.* An allusion to the use of the *stalking-horse* in fowling. Reed quotes John Gee's *New Shreds of the Old Snare:* "Methinks I behold the cunning fowler, such as I have knowne in the fenne countries and els-where, that doe shoot at woodcockes, snipes, and

wilde fowle, by sneaking behind a painted cloth which they carrey before them, having pictured in it the shape of a horse; which while the silly fowle gazeth on, it is knockt down with hale shot, and so put in the fowler's budget." Cf. *A. Y. L.* v. 4. 111.

99. *Sits the wind*, etc. Cf. *M. of V.* i. 1. 18: "to know where sits the wind;" *Ham.* i. 3. 56: "The wind sits in the shoulder of your sail," etc.

101. *I cannot tell*, etc. Some point the passage thus: "I cannot tell what to think of it; but that she loves him with an enraged affection, — it is past the infinite of thought." *Enraged* = mad, intense. *Infinite* = infinite stretch, utmost power.

108. *Discovers*. Shows. Cf. i. 2. 11 above; also 154 and iii. 2. 92 below.

111. *Sit you*. For *you*, see on i. 3. 57 above.

119. *Gull*. Trick; the only instance of this sense in S. Cotgrave (*French Dict.*) defines *baliverne* as "a lye, fib, gull; also, a babling, or idle discourse."

122. *Hold it up*. Keep it up, continue it. Cf. *M. N. D.* iii. 2. 239: "hold the sweet jest up;" *Ham.* v. 1. 34: "they hold up Adam's profession," etc.

139. *That*. For this affirmative use of *that*, cf. *J. C.* ii. 1. 15: "Crown him? That."

140. *Halfpence*. That is, pieces as small as halfpence; but Theobald explains it as "pieces *of the same bigness*," and compares *A. Y. L.* iii. 2. 372: "all like one another, as halfpence are." The old silver halfpenny was as small as our half-dime.

142. *To write*. That is, *as* to write. See on 41 above.

148. *Curses*. The reading of the early eds., changed by some to "cries"; but, as Furness remarks, "it is Claudio who speaks, and his words are less temperate than those of the white-bearded Leonato." Perhaps S. wrote "curses, prays," and the printer accidentally transposed the words.

150. *Ecstasy*. Madness, passion; the usual meaning in S. Cf.

*M. of V.* iii. 2. 112, *Ham.* iii. 4. 138, etc. *Overborne* = overcome. Cf. *M. N. D.* ii. 1. 92, *Hen. V.* iv. chor. 39, etc.

151. *Afeard.* Used by S. interchangeably with *afraid.*

157. *An alms.* A charity, a good deed. This use of *alms* is natural enough in itself and not rare in our old literature. Halliwell-Phillipps quotes *The Disobedient Child:* "It were almes, by my trothe, thou were well beaten." *Alms* is a true singular, the *s* belonging to the Greek original. Cf. *T. of S.* iv. 3. 5 and *Acts*, iii. 3.

158. *Excellent.* An adverb, as often. Cf. iii. 1. 98 below: "an excellent good name," etc. *Exceeding* (160) is similarly used.

163. *Blood.* See on ii. 1. 178 above.

167. *Dotage.* Doting affection; as in 215 below. See also *M. N. D.* iv. 1. 52, *Oth.* iv. 1. 27, *A. and C.* i. 1. 1, etc.

168. *Daffed.* The same as *doff* = *do off.* Here it means to put aside, as in v. 1. 78 below. It is used literally in *A. and C.* iv. 4. 13:—

> "He that unbuckles this, till we do please
> To daff 't for our repose, shall hear a storm."

179. *Contemptible.* Contemptuous. Cf. *medicinable*, ii. 2. 5 above. On the other hand, *contemptuous* is sometimes used in the sense of contemptible; as in 2 *Hen. VI.* i. 3. 86: "Contemptuous base-born callet as she is."

181. *Proper.* Good-looking, handsome; as in *M. N. D.* i. 2. 88, *M. of V.* i. 2. 77, etc.

182. *A good outward happiness.* "A happy exterior, a prepossessing appearance" (Schmidt). Cf. "excellent differences" = different excellencies, in *Ham.* v. 2. 112, etc.

186. *Wit.* Wisdom, intellectual power; as the connection shows. See on i. 1. 66 above, and cf. 235 below. Furness, however, thinks it has the modern sense; as in i. 1. 64 above.

197. *Large.* Free, broad. Cf. iv. 1. 50 below.

201. *Counsel.* Reflection, deliberation. Cf. iv. 1. 100 below.

205. *Let it cool the while.* Let it rest meanwhile. Cf. iii. 2. 127 below: "bear it coldly but till midnight."

209. *Walk.* Go, withdraw; as in *Lear*, iv. 7. 83, *Oth.* iv. 3. 4, etc.

214. *Carry.* Carry out, manage. Cf. iv. 1. 209 below: "this well carried," etc. See also *M. N. D.* iii. 2. 240, *T. N.* iii. 4. 150, etc.

215. *Another's.* The other's; as in *W. T.* iv. 4. 176, etc.

*And no such matter.* And it is nothing of the kind, it is not so at all. Cf. *Sonn.* 87. 14: "In sleep a king, but waking no such matter." See also i. 1. 191 above and v. 4. 82 below.

217. *Merely.* Entirely; as in *Temp.* i. 1. 59, *Ham.* i. 2. 127, etc. *A dumb show* = a pantomime; like that introduced in *Ham.* iii. 2 before the play, and in *Per.* at the beginning of act iii.

220. *The conference was sadly borne.* The conversation was seriously carried on. See on *sad*, i. 1. 184 above.

222. *Have their full bent.* Are at their utmost tension; a metaphor taken from the bending of a bow. Cf. iv. 1. 185, and *T. N.* ii. 4. 38: —

> "Then let thy love be younger than thyself,
> Or thy affection cannot hold the bent."

223. *Censured.* Judged, estimated. Cf. *Cor.* ii. 1. 25: "do you two know how you are censured here in the city?" *J. C.* iii. 2. 16: "censure me in your wisdom, and awake your senses that you may the better judge," etc.

231. *Reprove.* Disprove, confute. Cf. *V. and A.* 787: "What have you urg'd that I cannot reprove?" 2 *Hen. VI.* iii. 1. 40: "Reprove my allegation, if you can."

233. *Argument.* Proof. Cf. *L. L. L.* i. 2. 175: "a great argument of falsehood," etc.

235. *Odd quirks.* Commonplace conceits. Cf. *Rich. III.* i. 3. 337: "old odd ends stolen out of holy writ."

239. *Quips.* Sarcasms. Cf. *T. G. of V.* iv. 2. 12: —

> "all her sudden quips,
> The least whereof would quell a lover's hope;"

Milton, *L'All.* 27: "Quips, and cranks, and wanton wiles," etc.

*Sentences.* Maxims. Cf. *R. of L.* 244: "a sentence or an old man's saw;" *M. of V.* i. 2. 11: "Good sentences," etc. *Paper bullets;* that is, taken from books.

256. *Withal* = with. Cf. i. 2. 22 above, where it is = with *it.* For *stomach,* see on i. 3. 14 above.

264. *A Jew.* Often used in this contemptuous way. Cf. *M. of V.* ii. 2. 119: "I am a Jew if I serve the Jew any longer;" 1 *Hen. IV.* ii. 4. 198: "I am a Jew else, an Ebrew Jew," etc.

---

## ACT III

SCENE I. — 1. *Thee.* Possibly = *thou,* as Abbott makes it. Cf. iv. 1. 24: "Stand thee," etc.

3. *Proposing.* Conversing; from the Fr. *propos,* discourse, talk (Steevens). Cf. the use of the noun in 12 just below. So *proposer* = speaker, orator, in *Ham.* ii. 2. 297.

4. *Whisper her ear.* Cf. *A. W.* ii. 3. 75: "The blushes in my cheeks thus whisper me;" *W. T.* i. 2. 437: "Your followers I will whisper to the business," etc.

7. *Pleached.* See on *thick-pleached,* i. 2. 9 above.

12. *Propose.* The quarto reading; the folio has "purpose," which Reed defends as sometimes used in the same sense. He quotes Knox's *Reformation in Scotland:* "with him six persons; and getting entrie, held purpose with the porter;" and again: "After supper he held comfortable purpose of God's chosen children." *Propose* is, however, generally adopted by the editors. For *listen,* cf. *Macb.* ii. 2. 28, *J. C.* v. 5. 15, etc.

16. *Trace.* Walk, pace. Cf. *M. N. D.* ii. 1. 25: "trace the forests wild."

24. *Lapwing.* Cf. *Ham.* v. 2. 193: "this lapwing runs away with the shell on his head," etc.

25. *Conference.* See on ii. 3. 220 above.

36. *Haggards.* Wild or untrained hawks. Cf. *T. of S.* iv. 1. 196 : —

> "Another way I have to man my haggard,
> To make her come and know her keeper's call;"

*Id.* iv. 2. 39 : "this proud disdainful haggard;" *T. N.* iii. 1. 71 : —

> "And, like the haggard, check at every feather
> That comes before his eye."

In *Oth.* iii. 3. 260, the word is used as an adjective = wild, untractable.

42. *Wish.* Desire, bid. Cf. *M. for M.* v. 1. 79 : —

> "*Duke.* You were not bid to speak.
> *Lucio.* No, my good lord,
> Nor wish'd to hold my peace."

For *wrestle . . . to let*, cf. *Hen. VIII.* ii. 4. 14 : —

> "Sir, I desire you [to] do me right and justice,
> And *to* bestow your pity on me," etc.

45. *As full as fortunate.* Fully as fortunate (as pointed by Staunton, Cambridge ed., and Schmidt). Most eds. point "as full, as fortunate." Both quarto and folio have "as full as."

50. *Of prouder stuff.* Cf. *J. C.* iii. 2. 97 : "Ambition should be made of sterner stuff." See also *Ham.* iii. 4. 36, iv. 7. 31, etc.

51. *Disdain and scorn*, etc. Cf. *Euphues Golden Legacie*, 1590 : "Her eyes were like those lampes that make the wealthie covert of the Heavens more gorgeous, sparkling favour and disdaine, courteous and yet coye, as if in them Venus had placed all her amorets, and Diana all her chastitie."

52. *Misprising.* Slighting, despising. Cf. *A. Y. L.* i. 1. 177 : "I am altogether misprised;" *Id.* i. 2. 192 : "your reputation shall not therefore be misprised," etc. So *misprision* = contempt in *A. W.* ii. 3. 159.

54. *Weak.* "Almost = stupid" (Schmidt). Cf. *L. L. L.* v. 2. 374 : "Your wit makes wise things foolish."

55. *Project.* Idea, conception.

56. *Self-endeared.* Self-loving, absorbed in love of self.

60. *How.* However. Cf. *Sonn.* 28. 8: "How far I toil, still farther off from thee;" *Cymb.* iv. 2. 17: "How much the quantity, the weight as much," etc.

61. *Spell him backward.* Misconstrue him; "alluding to the practice of witches in uttering prayers" (Steevens).

63. *Black.* Dark-complexioned. Cf. *T. G. of V.* v. 2. 12: "Black men are pearls in beauteous ladies' eyes." An *antic* was a buffoon. Cf. *Rich. II.* iii. 2. 162, *Hen. V.* iii. 2. 32, etc. Here it may mean any grotesque figure.

65. *Low.* For *low* as opposed to *tall*, cf. i. 1. 172 above. See also *M. N. D.* iii. 2. 295 fol.

*An agate.* Alluding to the figures cut in the agates set in rings. Cf. *L. L. L.* ii. 1. 236: "His heart, like an agate, with your print impress'd;" 2 *Hen. IV.* i. 2. 19: "I was never manned with an agate till now." See also *R. and J.* i. 4. 55: "In shape no bigger than an agate-stone" (in a ring).

66. *A vane.* Deighton suggests that there may also be a reference to the creaking of a vane. Cf. Borachio's speech, iii. 3. 130 below.

70. *Simpleness.* Simplicity, innocence. Cf. *M. N. D.* v. 1. 83: "simpleness and duty;" *A. W.* i. 1. 51: "the better for their simpleness." In *R. and J.* iii. 3. 77 it means silliness.

71. *Commendable.* Accented on the first syllable, as regularly in S., except in *M. of V.* i. 1. 111. Abbott also excepts *Ham.* i. 2. 87, but the other accent seems better there.

72. *From all fashions.* Averse to the ordinary ways of people. For *from* = away from, out of, cf. *Temp.* i. 1. 65: "Which is from my remembrance;" *J. C.* i. 3. 35: "Clean from the purpose" (see also *Ham.* iii. 2. 22), etc. There is a play upon this sense of *from* in *M. of V.* iii. 2. 192 and *Rich. III.* iv. 4. 258. Some editors change *not* to "nor," to avoid the double negatives.

76. *Press me to death.* Alluding to the ancient punishment of

the *peine forte et dure*, or pressing to death by heavy weights laid upon the body. Cf. *M. for M.* v. 1. 528: "pressing to death, whipping, and hanging;" *Rich. II.* iii. 4. 72: "I am press'd to death through want of speaking," etc.

79. *It were a better death*, etc. The reading of the quarto, which has "then," the old form of *than*. The 1st folio reads "a better death, to die;" and the 2d folio "a bitter death to die." White adopts this last reading, on the ground that the one in the text "can only refer to *Benedick's* consuming away in sighs; whereas it is herself that Hero represents as being in danger of being pressed to death with wit, if she reveal Benedick's passion, and '*therefore*,' she says, 'let Benedick consume' etc." But when Hero speaks of being pressed to death with wit, it is a mere feminine hyperbole; she has of course no real fear of such a death. Her thoughts then turn to Benedick, who, like herself, would be exposed to the mocks of Beatrice if his passion become known to her; and she says, naturally enough, Better let him die of secret love than of Beatrice's scorn. The transition is as thoroughly feminine as the form of expression.

80. *Tickling.* Metrically a trisyllable (*tickle-ing*) like *handling* in 2 *Hen. IV.* iv. 1. 161, *tacklings* in 3 *Hen. VI.* v. 4. 18, etc. Cf. *assembly*, v. 4. 34 below.

84. *Honest slanders.* Not *dishonest* or affecting her *honour*.

89. *Swift.* Ready; as in *A. Y. L.* v. 4. 65: "he is very swift and sententious," etc.

90. *Priz'd.* Estimated; as in iv. 1. 217 below: "what we have we prize not to the worth." See also *T. and C.* iv. 4. 136, *L. L. L.* v. 2. 224, etc.

96. *Argument.* "Discourse, or the powers of reasoning" (Johnson and Schmidt).

101. *Every day, to-morrow.* "Every day after to-morrow; a play on the question" (Staunton).

103. *Furnish.* Dress. Cf. *A. Y. L.* iii. 2. 258: "furnished like a hunter;" *R. and J.* iv. 2. 35: —

"such needful ornaments
As you think fit to furnish me to-morrow."

104. *Lim'd.* Ensnared as with birdlime. For the metaphor, cf. *T. N.* iii. 4. 82: "I have limed her;" *Ham.* iii. 3. 68:—

"O limed soul that, struggling to be free,
Art more engag'd!"

See also *R. of L.* 88, *Macb.* iv. 2. 34, etc.

107. *What fire is in mine ears?* Warburton sees an allusion to the vulgar notion that the ears burn when other people are talking of us. As Reed notes, the idea is very ancient, being mentioned by Pliny. Cf. Holland's translation: "Moreover is not this an opinion generally received, That when our ears do glow and tingle, some there be that in our absence doe talke of us?" Steevens quotes *The Castell of Courtesie*, 1582:—

"That I doe credite giue
vnto the saying old,
Which is, when as the eares doe burne,
some thing on thee is told."

I think, with Schmidt, that Beatrice does not refer to the proverb, but means simply "What fire pervades me by what I have heard!" Furness aptly says: "If there be any reader who does not apprehend what that fire of purification is, lit up by Hero, by whose quickening light Beatrice sees a new world with a new heaven and a new earth, he had better close his Shakespeare and read no more."

110. *No glory lives*, etc. "In the self-illumination which Beatrice is now experiencing, her past life flashes before her, and she sees that for the *pride and scorn* in which, as a girl, she had gloried, she now stands condemned; no glory waits on them, or is behind their back; therefore she abjures them" (Furness).

112. *Taming*, etc. "This image is taken from falconry. She had been charged with being as wild as *haggards of the rock;* she

therefore says that, *wild* as her *heart* is, she will *tame* it *to the hand*" (Johnson).

116. *Reportingly.* On hearsay.

SCENE II. — 2. *Consummate.* For the form, cf. *M. for M.* v. 1. 383: —

> "Do you the office, friar; which consummate,
> Return him here again."

See also on i. 1. 136 above.

3. *Bring.* Accompany. Cf. *W. T.* iv. 3. 122: "Shall I bring thee on the way?" See also *Genesis*, xviii. 16, *Acts*, xxi. 5, etc. *Vouchsafe* = allow; as in *C. of E.* v. 1. 282: "vouchsafe me speak a word," etc.

6. *The new gloss*, etc. Cf. *Mach.* i. 7. 34: "Which would be worn now in their newest gloss;" *Oth.* i. 3. 227: "the gloss of your new fortunes."

*As to show a child*, etc. Cf. *R. and J.* iii. 2. 29: —

> "As is the night before some festival
> To an impatient child that hath new robes
> And may not wear them."

7. *Only.* That is, only for his company. See on ii. 1. 136 above.

11. *Hangman.* Cf. *M. of V.* iv. 1. 125: "the hangman's axe," etc. But *hangman* in the present passage may be = rascal, rogue, as Johnson explains it in his *Dict.* It is certain that the word, having come to mean "an executioner in general," was afterwards used as a general term of reproach. It was also used sportively in this sense, and Nares gives this passage as an instance. He also cites Heywood, 1 *Edward IV.* v. 3: —

> "How dost thou, Tom? and how doth Ned? quoth he;
> That honest, merry hangman, how doth he?"

12. *Sound as a bell* was a common expression, as it still is.

20. *The toothache.* Boswell quotes Beaumont and Fletcher, *The False One*: —

"You had best be troubled with the toothache too,
For lovers ever are."

23. *Hang it first, and draw it afterwards.* A quibbling allusion to "hanging, drawing, and quartering." Cf. *M. for M.* ii. 1. 215: "they will draw you, Master Froth, and you will hang them;" *K. John*, ii. 1. 504: —

"Drawn in the flattering table of her eye!
Hang'd in the frowning wrinkle of her brow!
And quarter'd in her heart!"

26. *Worm.* A worm at the root of the tooth was formerly supposed to be the cause of toothache. Cf. Bartholomæus, *De Prop. Rerum*, 1535: "some tyme by wormes they [the teeth] ben chaunged into yelow colour, grene, or black: all this cometh of corrupt and evyll humours;" and again: "Wormes of the teethe ben slayne with myrre and opium."

30. *Fancy.* Love; as often. Don Pedro plays upon the word.

33. *Two countries at once.* Steevens quotes Dekker, *Seven deadly Sinnes of London*, 1606: "For an Englishman's sute is like a traitor's body that hath been hanged, drawne, and quartered, and is set up in severall places: his codpiece is in Denmarke: the collor of his dublet and the belly, in France: the wing and narrow sleeve, in Italy: the short waste hangs ouer a Dutch botcher's stall in Utrich: his huge sloppes speaks Spanish: Polonia gives him the bootes," etc.

34. *Slops.* Large loose breeches; as in the passage just quoted. Cf. 2 *Hen. IV.* i. 2. 34: "my short cloak and my slops;" *R. and J.* ii. 4. 47: "your French slop." Steevens quotes Jonson, *Alchemist*: —

"six great slops
Bigger than three Dutch hoys."

35. *No doublet.* Mason thought this should be "all doublet," to correspond with the actual dress of the old Spaniards. Steevens says: "*no doublet*; or, in other words, all cloak."

The passage *Or in the shape . . . no doublet* was omitted in the folio, probably to avoid giving offence to the Spaniards, with whom James became a friend in 1604 (Malone); or, as Wright suggests, to avoid offending James himself.

45. *Stuffed tennis balls.* Steevens cites Nash, *Wonderful Prognostication for* 1591: "they may sell their haire by the pound, to stuffe tennice balls;" and Henderson adds *Ram Alley*, 1611: "Thy beard shall serve to stuff those balls by which I get me heat at tenice;" and *The Gentle Craft*, 1600: "He 'll shave it off, and stuffe tenice balls with it."

52. *Note.* Mark, sign. Cf. *W. T.* i. 2. 287: "a note infallible;" *Hen. V.* iv. chor. 25: "Upon his royal face there is no note," etc.

54. *To wash his face.* "That the benign effect of the tender passion upon Benedick in this regard should be so particularly noticed requires, perhaps, the remark that in Shakespeare's time our race had not abandoned itself to that reckless use of water, either for ablution or potation, which has more recently become one of its characteristic traits" (White). But, as Wright observes, the reference here is probably to the use of cosmetics, which is in keeping with the mention of *paint* that follows.

58. *A lute-string.* Love-songs were then generally sung to the music of the lute. Cf. 1 *Hen. IV.* i. 2. 84: "a lover's lute." The *stops* of a lute were "small lengths of wire on which the fingers press the strings."

60. *Conclude.* The folio does not repeat the word.

64. *Conditions.* Qualities; as in *Hen. V.* iv. 1. 108, *A. W.* iv. 3. 288, etc.

66. *Face upwards.* Theobald wanted to read "heels upwards" or "face downwards," and Johnson and Steevens favoured the change; but the true interpretation is probably suggested by *W. T.* iv. 4. 131 and *Per.* v. 3. 43. For other explanations, which seem to me forced or far-fetched, the reader may be referred to Furness, who has almost two pages on the passage.

68. *Charm for the toothache.* Scot, in his *Discoverie of Witchcraft*, 1584, gives many charms for the toothache, one of which is the repeating of the following formula: "*Strigiles falcesque dentatæ, dentium dolorem persanate* — O horsse-combs and sickles that have so many teeth, come heale me now of my toothach."

70. *Hobby-horses.* The *hobby-horse* was a figure in the rural May-games and morris-dances. The name came to be used figuratively as a term of familiarity or of contempt. Cf. *L. L. L.* iii. 1. 31, *W. T.* i. 2. 276, and *Oth.* iv. 1. 160.

72. *To break with.* See on i. 1. 309 above.

79. *Good den.* Good evening; used as a salutation after noon, before which time *good morrow* or *good day* was the proper form.

85. *What's the matter?* Perhaps this belongs to Claudio, as Capell conjectured and Furness thinks "highly probable."

92. *Discover.* Reveal. See on i. 2. 11 above.

94. *Aim better at me.* Form a better opinion of me. Cf. *T. G. of V.* iii. 1. 45: "That my discovery be not aimed at" (that is, guessed at, suspected). See also *Rich. III.* i. 3. 65 and *Ham.* iv. 5. 9.

95. *For.* As for, as regards. *Holds you well* = thinks well of you. Cf. *T. and C.* ii. 3. 190: "T is said he holds you well" (see also iv. 1. 77); *Oth.* i. 3. 396: "He holds me well."

96. *In dearness of heart.* Out of love to you. For *help*, see on i. 1. 51 above.

100. *Circumstances shortened.* Not to go into particulars. Cf. *T. of S.* v. 1. 28: "To leave frivolous circumstances," etc.

101. *A talking of.* Cf. *Temp.* ii. 1. 185: "go a bat-fowling," etc.

102. *Disloyal.* Unfaithful, especially in love. Cf. *disloyalty* in ii. 2. 48 above. See also *Oth.* iii. 3. 409, etc.

107. *Paint out.* Fully describe.

117. *Trust that you see*, etc. The omission of the relative is especially frequent after the demonstrative *that*.

127. *Bear it coldly.* Keep quiet about it. Cf. ii. 3. 205 above: "let it cool the while."

129. *Untowardly.* Perversely, unluckily. S. uses the word nowhere else, but he has *untoward* (= refractory, unmannerly) in *T. of S.* iv. 5. 79 and *K. John*, i. 1. 243.

Scene III. — *Dogberry* gets his name from a shrub growing in the hedges throughout England, and *Verges* is the provincial pronunciation of *verjuice* (Steevens). Halliwell-Phillipps says that *Dogberry* occurs as a surname in a charter of the time of Richard II., and *Varges* as that of a usurer in *MS. Ashmol.* 38, where this epitaph is given: "Here lyes father Varges, who died to save charges."

7. *Give them their charge.* To *charge* his fellows seems to have been a regular part of the duty of the constable of the watch. Cf. Marston, *Insatiate Countess*: "Come on, my hearts: we are the city's security; I 'll give you your charge."

11. *George.* Halliwell-Phillipps reads "Francis," supposing him to be the person mentioned in iii. 5. 59 below; but that is not certain.

14. *Well-favoured.* Good-looking. See on *favour*, ii. 1. 94 above.

24. *Lantern.* Spelt "lanthorn" in the early eds. The sides of the lantern were then made of *horn*, and that may have suggested the orthography, though it has no connection with the etymology of the word. Cf. the quibble in 2 *Hen. IV.* i. 2. 55: "he hath the horn of abundance, and the lightness of his wife shines through it." The lantern, like the *bill* and *bell*, was a part of the regular equipment of the watch. Cf. *Wit in a Constable*, 1639: —

> "You 're chatting wisely o'er your bills and lanthorns,
> As becomes watchmen of discretion."

34. *No noise.* Cf. *R. and J.* i. 4. 40: "Dun 's the mouse [apparently = keep still], the constable's own word."

41. *Bills.* The bill was a kind of pike or halberd, formerly the weapon of the English infantry. Johnson says that it was still

carried by the watchmen of Lichfield in his day. Steevens quotes *Arden of Feversham*, 1592: —

"the watch
Are coming toward our house with glaives and bills."

47. *Not the men*, etc. Halliwell-Phillipps says that this was the usual excuse made by the constables when they had searched innocent persons.

51. *Meddle or make.* A familiar phrase, not entirely obsolete now, at least in New England.

56. *They that touch pitch.* A popular proverb, found in *Ecclesiasticus*, xiii. 1: "He that toucheth pitch shall be defiled therewith."

64. *If you hear a child cry*, etc. Steevens remarks: "It is not impossible but that part of this scene was intended as a burlesque on *The Statutes of the Streets*, imprinted by Wolfe in 1595. Among these I find the following: —

'22. No man shall blowe any horne in the night, within this citie, or whistle after the hour of nyne of the clock in the night, under paine of imprisonment.

'23. No man shall use to goe with visoures, or disguised by night, under paine of imprisonment.

'24. Made that night-walkers and evisdroppers, have like punishment.

'25. No hammer-man, as a smith, a pewterer, a founder, and all artificers making great sound, shall not worke after the houre of nyne at night,' etc.

'30. No man shall, after the houre of nyne at night, keep any rule,[1] whereby any such suddaine outcry be made in the still of the night, as making any affray, or beating his wyfe, or servant, or singing, or revyling in his house, to the disturbaunce of his neighbours, under paine of iiis. iiiid,' etc."

Ben Jonson is thought to have ridiculed this scene in the induction to his *Bartholomew Fair*: "And then a substantial watch to have stole in upon 'em, and taken them away with mistaking words,

[1] Be guilty of any disorder. Cf. *night-rule* in *M. N. D.* iii. 2. 5.

as the fashion is in the stage practice." Yet, as Mason observes, Ben himself, in his *Tale of a Tub*, makes his wise men of Finsbury speak in the same blundering style. Gifford believes it very improbable that Jonson refers to S., as these "mistaking words" were common in the plays of the time, and are elsewhere put into the mouths of constables.

74. *Present.* Represent; but not one of Dogberry's blunders. Cf. *Temp.* iv. 1. 167: "when I presented Ceres," etc.

78. *Statues.* The folio reading; the quarto has "statutes." It is quite certain that the blunder is Dogberry's.

85. *Keep your fellows' counsels and your own.* This is part of the oath of a grand juryman, and is one of many proofs of the poet's familiarity with legal formalities and technicalities.

88. *The church-bench.* In the porch of the church.

93. *Coil.* Bustle, confusion. Cf. v. 2. 97 below: "yonder 's old coil at home."

99. *Scab.* There is a play on the word, which sometimes meant a contemptible fellow. Cf. *T. N.* ii. 5. 82: "Out, scab!" It has been revived recently in that sense. For the quibble, cf. *T. and C.* ii. 1. 31, *Cor.* i. 1. 169, and 2 *Hen. IV.* iii. 2. 296.

102. *Pent-house.* A porch or shed with sloping roof, common in the domestic architecture of the time. There was one on the house in which S. was born. For *stand thee*, see on iii. 1. 1 above.

103. *Like a true drunkard.* Malone suggests that S. may have called him Borachio from the Spanish *borracho*, a drunkard, or *borracha*, a leathern bottle for wine. Whether S. knew that or not, the allusion here is unquestionably to the familiar Latin proverb, *in vino veritas*, as Furness also suggests. Borachio is always represented on the stage as drunk, but I do not believe that S. meant he should be.

109. *Villany.* Warburton wished to read "villain" here; but it is natural that Borachio should repeat the word, and the use of the abstract for the concrete is a familiar rhetorical figure. See on ii. 3. 20 above.

116. *Unconfirmed.* Inexperienced; as in *L. L. L.* iv. 2. 19: "his undressed, unpolished, uneducated, unpruned, untrained, or, rather, unlettered, or, ratherest, unconfirmed fashion."

126. *This seven year.* A common phrase = a long time. See on i. 1. 90 above, and cf. 1 *Hen. IV.* ii. 4. 343, etc.

132. *Bloods.* Young fellows. Cf. *J. C.* iv. 3. 262: "I know young bloods look for a time of rest." Elsewhere it means men of spirit or mettle; as in *J. C.* i. 2. 151: "the breed of noble bloods." See also *K. John*, ii. 1. 278, 461.

134. *Reechy.* Reeky, smoky, dirty. Cf. *Ham.* iii. 4. 182: "reechy kisses;" *Cor.* ii. 1. 225: "her reechy neck," etc.

135. *In the old church-window.* That is, in the painted glass. There were threescore and ten of the *god Bel's priests*, as we learn from the *Apocrypha*.

*The shaven Hercules* is probably the hero shaved to look like a woman while in the service of Omphale, his Lydian mistress. Warburton thought that the reference was to *Samson* whom some Christian mythologists identified with Hercules. Sidney, in his *Defence of Poesie*, tells of having seen "Hercules painted *with his great beard* and furious face in a womans attire, spinning at Omphales commandement."

136. *Smirched.* Smutched, soiled. Cf. iv. 1. 132 below: "smirched thus and mir'd with infamy." See also *A. Y. L.* i. 3. 114 and *Hen. V.* iii. 3. 17.

144. *Me.* See on i. 3. 57 above.

148. *Possessed.* Influenced. Cf. i. 1. 192 above: "possessed with a fury." In 154 just below it has much the same sense.

150. *Encounter.* Often used of the meeting of lovers. Cf. iv. 1. 91 below.

170. *A lock.* It was a fashion with the gallants of the time to wear a pendent lock of hair over the forehead or behind the ear, sometimes tied with ribbons, and called a *love-lock*. Fynes Moryson, in a description of the dress of Lord Mountjoy, says that his hair was "thinne on the head, where he wore it short, except a lock

under his left eare, which he nourished the time of this warre [the Irish War, in 1599], and being woven up, hid it in his neck under his ruffe." When not on service he probably wore it displayed. The portrait of Edward Sackville, Earl of Dorset, painted by Vandyck, shows this lock with a large knot of ribbon at the end of it hanging under the ear on the left side. See on i. 1. 77 above, and cf. *The Return from Parnassus*, 1606: —

> "He whose thin fire dwells in a smoky roofe,
> Must take tobacco, and must wear a lock."

174. *Masters.* In the quarto and the folio this speech and the next are both given to *Conrade.* In the folio, it reads thus: "*Conr.* Masters, neuer speake, vve charge you, let vs obey you to goe vvith vs." The correction, which is generally adopted, was made by Theobald.

177. *We are like to prove*, etc. "Here is a cluster of conceits. *Commodity* was formerly, as now, the usual term for an article of merchandise. To *take up*, besides its common meaning (to *apprehend*), was the phrase for obtaining goods on credit. 'If a man is thorough with them in honest taking up,' says Falstaff [2 *Hen. IV.* i. 2. 45], 'then they must stand upon security.' *Bill* was the term both for a *single bond* and a *halberd*" (Malone). For the quibble, cf. 2 *Hen. VI.* iv. 7, 135: "My lord, when shall we go to Cheapside, and take up commodities upon our bills?"

179. *In question.* That is, subject to judicial examination (Steevens). Cf. 2 *Hen. IV.* i. 2. 68: "He that was in question for the robbery?"

Scene IV. — 6. *Rabato.* Collar, ruff; sometimes, the wired support for a ruff. Cf. Dekker, *Guls Hornbook*, 1609: "Your stiff-necked rebatoes (that have more arches for pride to row under, than can stand under five London-bridges) durst not then," etc. Cotgrave, in his *Fr. Dict.*, as quoted by Nares, has "*Rabat* — a rebatoe for a woman's ruffe." Cf. Marston, *Scourge of Villanie*: —

"Alas her soule struts round about her neck;
Her seate of sense is her rebato set."

9. *By my troth, 's not so good.* This is the reading of both quarto and folio, as in 18 just below. It is a contraction for "By my troth, it 's," etc. So *this is* is shortened into *this'*, as in *Lear*, iv. 6. 187: "This' a good block" ("This a" in the folio).

13. *Tire.* Head-dress. Cf. *Sonn.* 53. 8: "And you in Grecian tires are painted new;" *T. G. of V.* iv. 4. 190: "If I had such a tire," etc.

14. *Hair.* The false hair used in the *tire;* though Delius takes it to be Hero's own hair.

17. *Exceeds.* Excels. For the intransitive use, cf. *Per.* ii. 3. 16: "To make some good, but others to exceed." The participle is often so used; as in *T. G. of V.* ii. 1. 100: "O exceeding puppet!"

18. *Night-gown.* Dressing-gown, or "undress" gown. Cf. *Macb.* ii. 2. 70, v. 1. 5, etc.

*In respect of* = in comparison with; as in *L. L. L.* v. 2. 639: "Hector was but a Troyan in respect of this," etc.

19. *Cuts.* Probably "slashed openings in the gown, filled in with some other material" (Wright). Schmidt defines *cut* as "a slope in a garment," whatever that may be, and compares *T. of S.* iv. 3. 90: "Here 's snip and nip and cut and slish and slash;" but it is doubtful whether it there has this technical meaning. Petruchio seems to be merely referring in a profane masculine way to the complicated cutting of the garment, which he has just said is "carv'd like an apple-tart." Immediately after, when the tailor asks, "But did you not request to have it cut?" he replies, "I bid thy master cut out the gown; but I did not bid him cut it to pieces." Perhaps this dialect of the mantua-maker is beyond the ken of the male critic.

20. *Down sleeves.* "Hanging sleeves" (Schmidt). As *side-sleeves* undoubtedly means long or hanging sleeves, Steevens reads "set with pearls down sleeves." In Laneham's *Account of Queen*

*Elizabeth's Entertainment at Kenelworth-Castle*, 1575, the minstrel's "gown had side-sleeves down to the mid-leg." Stowe, in his *Chronicle*, describes these sleeves as worn in the time of Henry IV., some of which, he says, "hung downe to the feete, and at least to the knees, full of cuts and jagges, whereupon were made these verses: —

> 'Now hath this land little neede of broomes,
> To sweepe away the filth out of the streete,
> Sen [since] side-sleeves of pennilesse groomes
> Will it up licke be it drie or weete.'"

*Side* or *syde* is said to be used, in the North of England and in Scotland, in the sense of *long* when applied to garments. A *side-gown* = a long one; as in the *Paston Letters:* "a short blue gown that was made of a side-gown." Cf. Fitzherbert's *Book of Husbandry:* "Theyr cotes be so syde that they be fayne to tucke them up whan they ride, as women do theyr kyrtels whan they go to the market."

White remarks here: "The dress was made after a fashion which is illustrated in many old portraits. Beside a sleeve which fitted more or less closely to the arm and extended to the wrist, there was another, for ornament, which hung from the shoulder, wide and open." If this explanation is correct, *down sleeves* would mean the inner close sleeves, *side-sleeves* the outer loose ones.

21. *Underborne.* According to Schmidt and Halliwell-Phillipps, this is = trimmed, or faced. Wright thinks it means "lined." *Tinsel* was "a stuff interwoven with gold or silver thread."

22. *Quaint.* Fanciful, or elegant. Cf. *T. of S.* iv. 3. 102: "a gown more quaint, more pleasing," etc.

32. *Saving your reverence.* "Margaret means that Hero was so prudish as to think that the mere mention of the word *husband* required an apology" (Cambridge ed.).

36. *Light.* S. is fond of playing on the different senses of *light;* as here on that of light in weight and that of wanton (as in "a light woman"). Cf. *C. of E.* iii. 2. 52, *M. N. D.* iii. 2. 133, *M.*

*of V.* iii. 2. 91, *Rich. II.* iii. 4. 86, *T. and C.* i. 3. 28, *Cymb.* v. 4. 25, etc.

43. '*Light o' love.*' A popular old dance tune, referred to again in *T. G. of V.* i. 2. 83: "best sing it to the tune of 'Light of love.'" Cf. *The Two Noble Kinsmen*, v. 2: "He gallops to the tune of 'Light o' love.'"

45. *Yea, light o' love.* The early eds. have "Ye light o' love," which some retain. Halliwell-Phillipps says that *light o' love* was a common term for a woman of light character.

46. *See.* In *barns* there is a quibbling reference to *bairns* = children. Cf. *W. T.* iii. 3. 70: "Mercy on 's, a barne! a very pretty barne!" *A. W.* i. 3. 28: "they say barnes are blessings."

48. *I scorn that with my heels.* A common expression, which is played upon by Lancelot in *M. of V.* ii. 2. 9: "scorn running with thy heels."

53. *For a hawk*, etc. *Heigh ho for a Husband* was the title of an old ballad. See on ii. 1. 317 above.

54. *For the letter*, etc. Referring to *ache* which was pronounced *aitch*. Cf. Heywood, *Epigrammes*, 1566: —

> "*H* is worst among letters in the crosse-row;
> For if thou find him either in thine elbow,
> In thine arm, or leg, in any degree;
> In thine head, or teeth, or toe, or knee;
> Into what place soever *H* may pike him,
> Wherever thou find *ache* thou shalt not like him;"

and *Wit's Recreation*, 1640: —

> "Nor hawk, nor hound, nor horse, those hhh [aitches],
> But ach itself, 't is Brutus' bones attaches."

It was only the *noun*, however, that had this pronunciation; the verb was pronounced and often spelt *ake*. In *V. and A.* 875 and *C. of E.* iii. 1. 58, the verb rhymes with *brake* and *sake*. The noun is of course dissyllabic in the plural, as is evident from the measure in *Temp.* i. 2. 370, *T. of A.* i. 1. 257, v. 1. 202. There is nothing

anomalous in this, as critics and teachers have supposed. The only strange thing about it is that the noun should have lost its original and proper pronunciation. Cf. *speak* and *speech*, *break* and *breach*, etc. In all such cases the *verb* has the *k*-sound.

55. *Turned Turk.* A proverbial expression = completely changed for the worse. Cf. *Ham.* iii. 2. 287: "if the rest of my fortunes turn Turk with me;" Cook, *Green's Tu Quoque:* "This it is to turn Turk, from an absolute and most compleat gentleman, to a most absurd, ridiculous, and fond lover."

57. *Trow.* That is, *I trow* = I wonder (Schmidt), or *trow ye* = think ye (Halliwell-Phillipps). Cf. *M. W.* i. 4. 140: "Who 's there, I trow?" *Cymb.* i. 6. 47: "What is the matter, trow?" In affirmative sentences, *I trow* is often = "I dare say, certainly" (Schmidt). Cf. *Rich. II.* ii. 1. 218, *1 Hen. VI.* ii. 1. 41, v. 1. 56, *R. and J.* i. 3. 33, etc.

60. *Gloves.* Presents of gloves were much in fashion in the time of S.

66. *Professed apprehension.* Set up for a wit; as the answer shows.

71. *Carduus Benedictus.* The Blessed Thistle, or Holy Thistle, an annual plant from the south of Europe, which got its name from its reputation as a cure-all. It was even supposed to cure the plague, which was the highest praise that could be given to a medicine in that day. Steevens quotes Cogan, *Haven of Health*, 1595: "This herbe may worthily be called *Benedictus*, or *Omnimorbia*, that is, a salve for every sore, not knowen to physitians of old time, but lately revealed by the speciall providence of Almighty God." The *Vertuose Boke of Dystillacyon of the Waters of all maner of Herbes*, 1527, says that "Water of Cardo Bendictus . . . heleth al dysseases that brenneth." Hayne, in his *Life of Luther*, 1641, states that about 1527 Luther "fell sick of a congealing blood about his heart," but "drinking the water of *carduus benedictus*, he was presently helped." The plant retains little of its ancient reputation in our day; though, according to Sweringen's *Pharmaceutical*

*Lexicon* (Phila. 1873), it is naturalized in this country and "considered tonic, diaphoretic, and emetic."

76. *Moral.* "That is, some secret meaning, like the moral of a fable" (Johnson). Cf. *T. of S.* iv. 4. 79: "to expound the meaning or moral of his signs and tokens."

87. *Eats his meat without grudging.* "And yet now, in spite of his resolution to the contrary, he *feeds* on *love*, and likes his food" (Malone). It is more likely that it means, Though he is in love, he is the same valiant trencherman (i. 1. 52) as of old.

89. *Look with your eyes*, etc "That is, direct your eyes toward the same object, namely, a husband" (Steevens).

91. *A false gallop.* Cf. *A. Y. L.* iii. 2. 119: "the very false gallop of verses." It may be = "forced gait" (1 *Hen. IV.* iii. 1. 135) According to Madden, it is = "artificial canter."

SCENE V. — 3. *Confidence.* Probably a blunder for *conference*, as in *R. and J.* ii. 4. 114 (Nurse's speech).

10. *Off the matter.* Astray, away from the subject. Cf. *Cymb.* i. 4. 17: "a great deal from the matter."

13. *Honest as the skin between his brows.* A proverbial expression. Cf. *Gammer Gurton's Needle*, 1575: "I am as true, I would thou knew, as skin betwene thy brows;" Cartwright, *Ordinary*, v. 2: "I am as honest as the skin that is between thy brows," etc.

17. *Palabras.* That is, *pocas palabras*, Spanish = few words. Cf. *T. of S.* ind. i. 5: "Therefore paucas pallabris; let the world slide: sessa!" Henley cites *The Spanish Tragedy*: "Pocas pallabras, milde as the lambe." *Palabras* has become naturalized in *palaver*.

19. *Tedious.* The tediousness of constables was proverbial. Cf. Jonson, *Cynthia's Revels*: "Ten constables are not so tedious."

21. *The poor duke's officers.* For the blundering transposition, cf. *M. for M.* ii. 1. 47: "I am the poor duke's constable" (cf. 185).

23. *Of your worship.* On your worship. Cf. *T. N.* iii. 4. 2: "What bestow of him?" See also *A. W.* iii. 5. 103.

25. *A thousand pound.* See on i. 1. 90 above.

35. *When the age*, etc. An obvious blunder for the old proverb, "When the wine is in, the wit is out." Heywood, in his *Epigrammes*, gives it "When ale is in, wit is out."

36. *A world to see.* "A treat to see" (Schmidt); "wonderful to see" (Steevens); or "worth seeing" (Holt White). Cf. *T. of S.* ii. 1. 313: "'t is a world to see How tame," etc. Baret, in his *Alvearie*, 1580, explains "It is a world to heare" by "it is a thing worthie the hearing;" and in the *Myrrour of Good Manners compyled in Latin*, etc., "Est operae pretium doctos spectare colonos" is rendered "A world it is to se wyse tyllers of the grounde." Many other examples of the expression might be given.

37. *God's a good man.* Another proverbial expression. Steevens quotes the old morality of *Lusty Juventus*: —

> "He wyl say, that God is a good Man,
> He can make him no better, and say the best he can;"

*A Mery Geste of Robin Hoode*: "For God is hold a righteous man;" Burton, *Anat. of Melancholy*: "God is a good man, and will doe no harme," etc.

53. *Suffigance.* That is, sufficient.

60. *Inkhorn.* The ancient equivalent of the modern *inkstand*, being made of horn.

61. *Examine those.* The folio reading; the quarto has "examination these." White remarks: "The blunder in the quarto is entirely out of place in Dogberry's mouth; it is not of the sort which S. has made characteristic of his mind. Dogberry mistakes the significance of words, but never errs in the forms of speech; he is not able to discriminate between sounds that are like without being the same, but he is never at fault in grammar; and this putting of a substantive into his mouth for a verb is entirely at variance with his habit of thought, and confounds his cacology with that which is of quite another sort." It may be added that

Dogberry has used the verb correctly in 48 above. Wright and Furness, however, prefer the quarto reading.

64. *Here's that*, etc. He touches his head as he speaks.

*Non-come*. He confounds *non-compos* with *non-plus*.

---

## ACT IV

SCENE I. — 6. *No*. Miss Cecilia O'Brien ("Shakespeare's Young Men," in the *Westminster Review*, Oct. 1876) classes Claudio with Tybalt and Laertes. She says: "The young men of the fifth type . . . have all certain good points, but they are unbalanced men, and easily hurried into excesses through over-confidence in their own judgment. Tybalt, Claudio, and Laertes belong to this class, and they have all the same peculiarity. They are so fully persuaded of the justice and right of their own ideas that they take any means to gain their object, quite disregarding the cruelty, treachery, or meanness which they perpetrate. . . . Claudio is an accomplished and gallant gentleman, much liked by his friends, and really attached to Hero; but he is so bent on avenging his own fancied wrong, so sure that he has the right to do so, that he quite ignores the cruel injustice of condemning his bride unheard. There is no real sense of justice about any of this class; their feeling of honour is touched, and they are wild for revenge, but they do not care how unjustly they get it. There is a little touch of affectation about Claudio, not so strong as in Tybalt; but Don John talks of 'the exquisite Claudio,' and Benedick jeers at his fantastical language and the love of finery which he develops after falling in love." Of Benedick, on the other hand, she says: "Benedick tries hard to appear to have neither heart nor feeling, but they come out in spite of him. His mocking laugh dies into silence when people are in real trouble; he cannot resist trying to take Hero's part, and believes in her innocence more readily than her own father. . . . It is curious with what cool contempt he treats

Claudio when Beatrice makes him quarrel with him, as if there had been a lurking feeling in his mind that a weak nature was concealed under his friend's taking exterior."

12. *If either of you know*, etc. Douce remarks: "This is borrowed from our Marriage Ceremony, which (with a few slight changes in phraseology) is the same as was used in the time of Shakespeare."

23. *Some be of laughing*, etc. A quotation from the old grammars. Cf. Lyly, *Endymion*, 1591, where one of the characters exclaims "Heyho!" "What's that?" another asks; and the reply is: "An interjection, whereof some are of mourning: as *eho*, *vah*."

24. *Stand thee.* See on iii. 1. 1 above.

30. *Render.* Give. Cf. *A. Y. L.* i. 2. 21: "What he hath taken away from thy father perforce, I will render thee again in affection," etc.

31. *Learn.* Teach. Cf. *Temp.* i. 2. 365: "For learning me your language," etc.

38. *Comes not*, etc. Is not that modest blush the evidence of artless innocence?

42. *Luxurious.* Lustful; as in *Mach.* iv. 3. 58, etc. It is the only sense in which S. uses either the adjective or the noun.

45. *Knit.* Cf. *M. N. D.* i. 1. 172: "By that which knitteth souls and prospers loves;" *Cymb.* ii. 3. 122: "to knit their souls," etc. For *approved*, see on ii. 1. 376 above.

46. *In your own proof.* In your own trial of her. *Dear* is a dissyllable.

48. *Defeat.* Ruin, destruction. Cf. *Hen. V.* i. 2. 107: "Making defeat on the full power of France;" *Ham.* ii. 2. 598: —

> "Upon whose property and most dear life
> A damn'd defeat was made."

50. *Large.* Free, licentious. Cf. ii. 3. 197 above: "large jests."

54. *Out on thee! Seeming!* The old eds. have "Out on thee

seeming, I will," etc. Pope and many others read "Out on thy seeming!" But the change in the pointing seems to justify the old reading.

*I will write against it*, etc. Cf. *Cymb.* ii. 5. 32:—

> "I 'll write against them,
> Detest them, curse them."

55. *Seem.* Hanmer changed this to "seem'd;" but, as Furness remarks, "here, before the very eyes of Claudio, Hero stands, not in the past but in the present, as pure as moonlight, and the very type of chastity, and in the rosy tint which catches his eye we see the deepening blush of indignation on her cheek." *Orb* refers to the crystalline sphere of the Ptolemaic astronomy in which the moon (*Dian*) was fixed and carried round. Cf. *Ham.* iv. 7. 15: "as the star moves not but in his [its] sphere." See also *Temp.* ii. 1. 183, *M. N. D.* ii. 1. 7, 153, iii. 2. 61, *K. John*, v. 7. 74, etc.

56. *As is the bud.* "Before the air has tasted its sweetness" (Johnson).

60. *Wide.* Wide of the mark, far from the truth. Cf. *T. and C.* iii. 1. 97: "you are wide," etc.

62. *Gone about.* Endeavoured. Cf. i. 3. 11 above.

63. *Stale.* See on ii. 2. 25 above.

64. *Are these things*, etc. Cf. *Macb.* i. 3. 83: "Were such things here as we do speak about?"

66. *Nuptial.* S. uses only the singular in this sense, except in *Per.* v. 3. 80.

*True! O God!* This certainly refers to what Don John has just said. Some eds. print "True, O God!" as if it were a reply to Benedick.

71. *Move one question.* Cf. *T. and C.* ii. 3. 89: "We dare not move the question of our place."

72. *Kindly.* Natural. Cf. 2 *Hen. IV.* iv. 5. 84: "kindly tears," etc. In *A. and C.* ii. 5. 78, "kindly creatures" = such as the

land naturally produces. Cf. "kindly fruits of the earth" in the *Prayer-Book*.

90. *Liberal*. Licentious in speech. Cf. *Ham*. iv. 7. 171: "liberal shepherds," etc.

91. *Encounters*. Meetings. See on iii. 3. 150 above.

94. *Spoke*. We have had *spoken* in 64 above.

96. *Without*, etc. An Alexandrine.

97. *Misgovernment*. Want of self-control, misconduct. S. uses the word only here, but he has *misgoverning* in the same sense in *R. of L.* 654. On *thy much*, cf. *M. for M.* v. 1. 534: "thy much goodness," etc. See also *Matthew*, vi. 7.

98. *What a Hero*, etc. Johnson says: "I am afraid here is intended a poor conceit upon the word *Hero;*" but this is very improbable.

104. *Conjecture*. Suspicion. Cf. *W. T.* ii. 1. 176: "as gross as ever touch'd conjecture;" *Ham*. iv. 5. 15: —

> "she may strew
> Dangerous conjectures in ill-breeding minds."

106. *Gracious*. Lovely, attractive; as in *T. N.* i. 5. 281, *K. John*, iii. 4. 81, 96, etc. The word is here a trisyllable; as in *Sonn.* 135. 7.

110. *Smother her spirits up*. Cf. *Hen. V.* iv. 5. 20: "To smother up the English," etc.

115. *May*. Can. See on ii. 3. 22 above, and cf. iii. 2. 115: "May this be so?"

121. *The story*, etc. "That is, the story which her blushes discover to be true" (Johnson). Schmidt takes *blood* to be used in the same sense as in ii. 1. 178 above. Seymour objects to the former explanation that Hero had fainted; but we find the Friar afterwards referring to the "thousand blushing apparitions" he had noted in her face, and this may be a similar reference.

124. *Spirits*. Monosyllabic, as often.

125. *On the rearward.* Cf. *Sonn.* 90. 6: "In the rearward of a conquer'd woe." See also 2 *Hen. IV.* iii. 2. 339.

127. *Chid.* Similarly followed by *at* in *T. G. of V.* ii. 1. 78, *A. Y. L.* iii. 5. 129, *W. T.* iv. 4. 6, etc. Elsewhere it is followed by *with;* as in *Sonn.* 111. 1, *Oth.* iv. 2. 167, and *Cymb.* v. 4. 32.

*Frame.* "Order, disposition of things" (Steevens). Schmidt, less happily, makes *frame* = mould (as in *W. T.* ii. 3. 103), and explains the passage, "Did I grumble against the niggardness of nature's casting-mould?"

128. *One too much by thee!* Cf. *T. G. of V.* v. 4. 52: "too much by one."

131. *Took.* S. uses *taken* (or *ta'en*) and *took* for the participle.

132. *Who smirched.* Who being smirched, if she were smirched. For *smirched*, cf. iii. 3. 136 above. *Mir'd* = soiled. Used again as a verb (= sink in mud) in *T. of A.* iv. 3. 147: "Paint till a horse may mire upon your face." Halliwell-Phillipps cites Palsgrave, *Lesclarcissement de la Langue Francoyse*, 1530: "I myar, I beraye with myar; the poore man is myred up to the knees;" and Taylor, *Workes*, 1630:—

> "I was well entred (forty winters since)
> As farre as *possum* in my *Accidence;*
> And reading but from *possum* to *posset*,
> There was I mir'd, and could no further get."

136. *Proud on.* *On* and *of* are often interchanged. See on iii. 5. 23 above.

138. *Valuing of her.* Estimating what she was to me.

139. *That.* *So* that; as often. On the passage, cf. *Macb.* ii. 6. 60:—

> "Will all great Neptune's ocean wash this blood
> Clean from my hand?"

141. *Season.* For the metaphor, which S. was fond of, cf. *A. W.* i. 1. 55: "'T is the best brine a maiden can season her praise in;" *T. N.* i. 1. 30:—

"all this to season
A brother's dead love, which she would keep fresh
And lasting in her sad remembrance;"

*R. and J.* ii. 3. 72: —

"How much salt water thrown away in waste,
To season love, that of it doth not taste!"

See also *L. C.* 18.

143. *Attir'd in wonder.* Cf. *R. of L.* 1601: "Why art thou thus attir'd in discontent?" *T. N.* iv. 3. 3: "'t is wonder that enwraps me thus."

153. *Wash'd.* That is, *he* washed. The ellipsis of the nominative is common when it is easily applied.

154. *Hear me*, etc. In the early eds. this and the three following lines are printed as prose, and "been silent" is given for *silent been.* Wright joins *By noting of the lady* to what follows.

156. *And given way*, etc. And let these things take their course.

157. *By noting.* From noting; because I have been noting or observing. This is no unusual sense of *by*, though Wright seems to think so. Schmidt (under *by*) gives many instances of "the idea of instrumentality passing into that of causality." Furness quotes Mätzner to the same effect.

158. *Apparitions.* Metrically equivalent to five syllables.

159. *Shames.* For the plural, cf. *A. and C.* i. 4. 72: —

"Let his shames quickly
Drive him to Rome."

160. *Bear.* The folio reading, and preferable to the "beate" of the quarto, though some editors adopt the latter.

162. *To burn the errors.* Steevens compares *R. and J.* i. 2. 93:

"When the devout religion of mine eye
Maintains such falsehood, then turn tears to fires;
And these, who often drown'd could never die,
Transparent heretics, be burnt for liars!"

165. *Which with experimental seal*, etc. That is, his *observations* confirm what he has learned by his *reading*. *Book*, which some would change to "books," simply repeats *reading*.

*Doth warrant*, etc. That is, confirm what I have read.

169. *Biting*. Often used metaphorically by S. Cf. *M. W.* v. 5. 178: "a biting affliction;" *M. for M.* i. 3. 19: "most biting laws," etc.

172. *Not denies*. Cf. *Temp.* ii. 1. 121: "I not doubt;" *Id.* v. 1. 38: "Whereof the ewe not bites," etc. See also v. 1. 22 below: "they themselves not feel."

175. *What man*, etc. Warburton sees great subtlety in this question. No man's name had been mentioned; but had Hero been guilty it was very probable that she would not have observed this, and might therefore have betrayed herself by giving the name. I suspect, however, that there is more of Warburton than of Shakespeare in this explanation.

184. *Misprision*. Misapprehension, mistake. Cf. *M. N. D.* iii. 2. 90: —

> "Of thy misprision must perforce ensue
> Some true love turn'd, and not a false turn'd true."

185. *The very bent of honour*. The utmost degree of honour (Johnson). Cf. ii. 3. 204 above: "her affections have their full bent." The metaphor is taken from the bending of a bow. Furness quotes the *New Eng. Dict.*, which defines *bent* as the "extent to which a bow may be bent, . . . degree of tension; hence degree of endurance, capacity for taking in or receiving; limit of capacity," etc. Schmidt makes *bent* here = inclination, disposition (as in *R. and J.* ii. 2. 143, *J. C.* ii. 1. 210, etc.), but the other meaning is more appropriate and more forcible.

186. *Wisdoms*. A common use of the plural in S. when more than one person is referred to.

187. *Practice*. Plotting, trickery; as in *M. for M.* v. 1. 107, 123, 239, etc. Walker puts this among the passages in which *live*

and *lie* were probably confounded by the old printers, but S. may have written *lives*.

188. *Frame.* Framing, devising.

193. *Eat.* S. uses both *eat* and *eaten* for the participle. Cf. notes on 94 and 131 above. *Invention* = mental activity (Schmidt); as in *Oth.* iv. 1. 201: "of so high and plenteous wit and invention," etc. The word is here a quadrisyllable. See on *apparitions*, 158 above.

196. *In such a kind.* Cf. ii. 1. 68 above: "in that kind." Some would change *kind* to "cause" on account of the rhyme, but we find another instance of rhyme in 214, 215, where no change has been suggested.

199. *To quit me of them.* To requite myself in respect of them, to be even with them. Cf. *Cor.* iv. 5. 89: "to be full quit of those my banishers;" *T. of S.* iii. 1. 92: "Hortensio will be quit with thee," etc.

*Throughly.* Thoroughly. Cf. *Temp.* iii. 3. 14, *Ham.* iv. 5. 136, etc. See also *Matthew*, iii. 12.

204. *Ostentation.* Similarly used of funeral pomp in *Ham.* iv. 5. 215. Elsewhere it is = outward show, without the idea of pretentiousness. Cf 2 *Hen. IV.* ii. 2. 54: "all ostentation of sorrow;" *A. and C.* iii. 6. 52: —

> "The ostentation of our love, which, left unshown,
> Is often left unlov'd," etc.

In *L. L. L.* v. 2. 409 ("full of maggot ostentation") it has its modern meaning. Here the word is metrically five syllables.

206. *Hang mournful epitaphs.* For the old custom alluded to, see on v. 1. 285 below.

208. *What shall become*, etc. That is, what will come, etc. Cf. *T. N.* ii. 2. 37: "What will become of this?" (what will be the result of this?), etc.

209. *Well carried.* Cf. *M. N. D.* iii. 2. 240: "This sport, well carried, shall be chronicled." See on *carry*, ii. 3. 214 above.

210. *Remorse.* Pity; as very often.

218. *Whiles.* Used interchangeably with *while* as a conjunction, but never as a noun. Some would transpose *lack'd* and *lost;* but *lack'd* does not mean missed, but missing, wanting. Cf. *M. of V.* i. 1. 37, *M. N. D.* ii. 1. 223, etc. Even if it were a case of what the rhetoricians call "hysteron-proteron" (a figure recognized by Puttenham in his *Arte of English Poesie*, 1589), other examples are to be found in S.

219. *Rack.* Stretch, strain, exaggerate. Cf. *M. of V.* i. 1. 181: —

> "Try what my credit can in Venice do;
> That shall be rack'd, even to the uttermost," etc.

222. *Upon.* In consequence of. Cf. v. 1. 251 below: "And fled he is upon this villany." See also ii. 3. 210 above.

223. *Idea.* Image. Cf. *Rich. III.* iii. 7. 13: —

> "Withal I did infer your lineaments,
> Being the right idea of your father;"

*L. L. L.* iv. 2. 69: "forms, figures, shapes, objects, ideas," etc. S. uses the word only three times.

224. *Study.* Schmidt takes this to be a figurative use of *study* = a room for study, and compares *Sonn.* 24. 7: "my bosom's shop;" but *study of imagination* may be simply = imaginative study, imaginative reflections.

227. *Moving-delicate.* The hyphen is not in the early eds., and some modern ones omit it.

228. *Eye and prospect.* Cf. *K. John*, ii. 1. 208: "Before the eye and prospect of your town."

230. *Liver.* Anciently supposed to be the seat of love. Cf. *R. of L.* 47, *Temp.* iv. 1. 56, *M. W.* ii. 1. 121, *A. Y. L.* iii. 2. 443, *T. N.* ii. 4. 101, ii. 5. 106, etc.

232. *No, though he thought,* etc. "A line instinct with touching knowledge of human charity. Pity attends the faults of the dead; and survivors visit sin with regret rather than reproach" (Clarke).

233. *Success.* That which is to *succeed* or follow, the issue. Cf.

*A. and C.* iii. 5. 6 : "What is the success ?" 2 *Hen. VI.* ii. 2. 46 : "things ill-got had ever bad success ; " *T. and C.* ii. 2. 117 : "bad success in a bad cause," etc.

236. *Levell'd.* Technically = aimed ; as in *L. C.* 282, *Rich. III.* iv. 4. 202, etc. *But this* refers to what follows ; as would be evident if it were at the end of the line (Furness).

239. *Sort.* Fall out, result. Cf. v. 4. 7 below : "all things sort so well." See also *M. N. D.* iii. 2. 352, *Ham.* i. 1. 109 etc.

241. *Reclusive.* Used by S. nowhere else.

242. *Injuries.* Injurious treatment or comment.

243. *Advise.* That is, prevail upon by advice, persuade. Cf. *Lear*, v. 1. 2 : "he is advis'd by aught," etc.

244. *Inwardness.* Confidence, intimacy. The noun is used by S. only here, but we have *inward* = confidential in *L. L. L.* v. 1. 102 : "what is inward between us," etc. Cf. *Rich. III.* iii. 4. 8 : "inward with the royal duke." So the noun *inward* = confidential friend in *M. for M.* iii. 2. 138 : "I was an inward of his."

248. *Being that.* Since. Cf. 2 *Hen. IV.* ii. 1. 199 : "being you are to take soldiers," etc. Daniel's suggestion of "float" for *flow* is very plausible.

249. *The smallest twine*, etc. Johnson remarks : "This is one of our author's observations upon life. Men overpowered with distress eagerly listen to the first offers of relief, close with every scheme, and believe every promise. He that has no longer any confidence in himself is glad to repose his trust in any other that will undertake to guide him."

250. *Presently.* See on i. 1. 88 above.

251. *To strange sores*, etc. Cf. *Ham.* iv. iii. 9 : —

> "diseases desperate grown
> By desperate appliance are relieved,
> Or not at all."

253. *Prolong'd.* Postponed ; as in *Rich. III.* iii. 4. 47. See also *Ezekiel*, xii. 25.

264. *Even.* Plain. Cf. 2 *Hen. IV.* ii. 3. 2 : "Give even way unto my rough affairs."

265. *May.* Can. See on ii. 3. 22 above.

274. *By my sword.* On swearing by the sword, cf. *Ham.* i. 5. 147, *W. T.* ii. 3. 168, *Rich. II.* i. 3. 179, etc.

278. *Eat your word.* Cf. *A. Y. L.* v. 4. 155 and the play upon the phrase in 2 *Hen. IV.* ii. 2. 149.

289. *Kill Claudio.* Not an "outburst of vindictiveness," as often interpreted ; but due to her feeling that "if her lover's protestation be sincere, he *must*, were it at the cost of all other friendship in the world, show himself that champion of her own peace, her cousin's fame, and her family's reputation, which he has constituted himself by that very avowal" (Fletcher). Furness remarks that this interpretation "cannot be too strongly commended."

291. *To deny it.* By refusing it ; the "indefinite use" of the infinitive.

293. *I am gone, though I am here.* As Beatrice is about to go, Benedick seizes and detains her ; she tries in vain to escape, and says, "My heart is absent, though I am present in body." As Halliwell-Phillipps remarks, this is very effective on the stage.

301. *Approved.* Proved. See on ii. 1. 376 above. *In the height* = in the highest degree. Cf. *C. of E.* v. 1. 200 : "Even in the strength and height of injury." So *to the height* and *at the height ;* as in *Hen. VIII.* i. 2. 214 : "to the height a traitor ;" *A. Y. L.* v. 2. 50 : "at the height of heart-heaviness," etc.

303. *Bear her in hand.* Keep her in expectation, flatter her with false hopes. Cf. *T. of S.* iv. 2. 3, *Mach.* iii. 1. 80, *Ham.* iii. 2. 67, *Cymb.* v. 5. 43, etc.

306. *I would eat,* etc. Steevens quotes Chapman, *Iliad,* xxii. : —

> "Hunger for slaughter, and a hate that eates thy heart to eate
> Thy foe's heart."

So Hecuba (*Iliad,* xxiv.), speaking of Achilles, expresses a wish to use her teeth on his liver.

310. *Proper.* Often used in this ironical way. Cf. i. 3. 50 above: "A proper squire!"

315. *Counties.* See on ii. 1. 186 above.

316. *Count, Count Comfect.* The quarto reads "counte, counte comfect;" the folio, "Counte, comfect." *Count Comfect* is used in derision, like "My Lord Lollipop" (Staunton). White sees a play upon both *count* and *confect.* "Her wit and her anger working together, she at once calls Claudio's accusation 'a goodly *conte* confect,' that is, a story made up, and him 'a *count* confect,' that is, a nobleman of sugar candy; for he was plainly a pretty fellow and a dandy; and then she clenches the nail that she has driven home by adding 'a sweet gallant, surely!' This sense of the passage . . . is further evident from the inter-dependence of the whole exclamation, 'Surely a princely *testimony*, a goodly *count*,'—the first part of which would be strangely out of place if there were no pun in the second. In Shakespeare's time the French title *Count* was pronounced like *conte* or *compte*, meaning a fictitious story, a word which was then in common use." But, as Furness remarks, such interpretations seem too fine-spun; "while it is impossible to deny them, it is hard to assent to them." For myself, I think that S. would often smile at what over-ingenious commentators "read into" his writings.

319. *Courtesies.* Mere forms of courtesy. Here both quarto and folio have "cursies," which Halliwell-Phillipps believes to be an old form used only in the sense of obeisance, or the outward manifestation of courtesy. See on ii. 1. 54 above. The *curtsy* was formerly used by men as well as women. Cf. *Rich. III.* i. 3. 49: "Duck with French nods and apish courtesy;" *L. L. L.* i. 2. 66: "a new-devised courtesy;" *A. W.* v. 3. 324: "Let thy courtesies alone; they are scurvy ones," etc.

321. *Trim.* The word, like *proper* (see on 310 above) is often used ironically. Cf. *L. L. L.* v. 2. 363: "Trim gallants;" *M. N. D.* iii. 2. 157: "A trim exploit," etc. *Ones* = tongues; such change from singular to plural being not uncommon in Elizabethan English. Cf. *Sonn.* 78. 3:—

"As every alien pen hath got my use,
And under thee their poesy disperse;"

where the plural in *their* and in the subject of *disperse* is implied in *every pen.*

333. *Engaged.* Pledged; that is, to challenge him.

335. *A dear account.* One that will cost him dear. Wright compares *R. and J.* i. 5. 120: "O dear account! My life is my foe's debt."

Scene II. — *Enter . . . in gowns.* The gowns of constables are often alluded to in writers of the time. Malone quotes *The Blacke Booke*, 1604: "when they mist their constable, and sawe the blacke gowne of his office lye full in a puddle."

1. This speech is assigned to "*Keeper*" in the early eds. (see on ii. 3. 37 above), and "*Kemp*" is prefixed to most of the speeches of Dogberry in the remainder of the scene, as "*Cowley*" or "*Couley*" is to those of Verges. In line 4, however, we find "*Andrew*," a name that cannot be identified with that of any comic actor of the time; but perhaps it was the familiar appellation of some one of them. Some suppose it to be a nickname of Kemp from his playing the part of Merry Andrew.

5. *Exhibition to examine.* Perhaps a blunder for "examination to exhibit," as Steevens explains it.

18–21. *Yea, sir, . . . such villains!* Found in the quarto, but omitted in the folio. As Theobald, who restored the passage to the text, remarks, "it supplies a defect, for without it the town-clerk asks a question of the prisoners, and goes on without staying for any answer to it." Blackstone believes that the omission was made on account of the statute of James I. forbidding the use of the name of God on the stage.

20. *Defend.* Forbid. See on ii. 1. 94 above.

27. *I will go about with him.* "I will go to work with him, he shall find his match in me" (Schmidt). See on i. 3. 11 above.

31. *They are both in a tale.* "They both say the same"

(Schmidt). "Dogberry had heard of getting at the truth by separate examination, and sagaciously asking a question to which they could not but both give the same answer, expresses his surprise at the failure of his wise experiment. The humour of the observation is admirable" (Pye).

37. *Eftest.* Quickest, readiest. Theobald changed it to "deftest," and Steevens thought that it was meant to be a blunder for that word. *Deftly* occurs in *Macb.* iv. 1. 68.

53. *By the mass.* Halliwell-Phillipps remarks that this oath was then going out of fashion, and is therefore appropriately put into the mouth of Verges — "a good old man, sir." But, as Wright notes, Borachio uses it (iii. 3. 98). Cf. Sir John Harrington, *Epigrams*, 1633: —

> "In elder times an ancient custome was,
> To sweare in weighty matters by the Masse;
> But when the masse went downe (as old men note)
> They swore then by the crosse of this same grote;
> And when the Crosse was likewise held in scorne,
> Then, by their faith, the common oath was sworne.
> Last, having sworne away all faith and troth,
> Onely God-damne them is their common oath.
> Thus custome kept decorum by gradation,
> That losing Masse, Crosse, Faith, they find damnation."

65. *Upon.* In consequence of. See on iv. 1. 222 above.

70. *Let them*, etc. The quarto reads: "*Couley.* Let them be in the hands of coxcombe." The folio has "*Sex.* Let them be in the hands of *Coxcombe.*" The reading in the text is Malone's, who also suggested —

> "*Verges.* Let them be in the hands of —
> *Conrade.* Coxcomb!"

There is not much to choose between these two emendations. The Cambridge editors suggest that *Let them be in the hands* "may be the corruption of a stage-direction [*Let them bind them*] or [*Let them bind their hands*]."

74. *Naughty.* Formerly used in a much stronger sense than at present. Cf. *Lear*, iii. 3. 37: "Naughty lady!" (Goneril).

77. *My years.* Mr. Weiss, in quoting this passage, gives "my ears," but as I find no authority for that reading, I take it to be a misprint; Dogberry could hardly have confounded words so familiar as *years* and *ears*.

84. *Piece of flesh.* Cf. *A. Y. L.* iii. 2. 68: "a good piece of flesh indeed!" *T. N.* i. 5. 30: "as witty a piece of Eve's flesh as any in Illyria;" *L. L. L.* iii. 1. 136: "My sweet ounce of man's flesh!"

87. *Losses.* Some critics who do not see the humour of making Dogberry boast of his "losses" as well as his "riches," have proposed "leases," "law-suits," etc., as emendations.

---

## ACT V

Scene I.—6. *Comforter.* The quarto reading. The 1st folio misprints "comfort."

7. *Suit.* Agree, coincide. Cf. *T. N.* i. 2. 50:—

> "I will believe thou hast a mind that suits
> With this thy fair and outward character."

10. *Patience* is probably a trisyllable, as in 19 and 272 below.

12. *Strain.* Feeling, emotion. Cf. *Sonn.* 90. 13: "strains of woe;" *T. and C.* ii. 2. 154:—

> "Can it be
> That so degenerate a strain as this
> Should once set footing in your generous bosoms?"

See also *Cor.* v. 3. 149, *T. of A.* iv. 3. 213, etc.

14. *Lineament.* White says: "pronounced properly in three syllables." Dogberry might have pronounced it so.

15. *Stroke his beard.* Dr. Ingleby compares *T. and C.* i. 3. 165: "Now play me Nestor; hem, and stroke thy beard!"

16. *Bid sorrow wag*, etc. This is the great *crux* of the play.

The quarto and folio read: "And, sorrow, wagge, crie hem," etc. Capell's emendation in the text is perhaps as satisfactory as any that has been proposed, and is adopted by the majority of editors. Many other emendations have been suggested. For *wag* = begone, cf. *M. W.* i. 3. 7: "let them wag; trot, trot." See also *Id* ii. 1. 238, ii. 3. 74, 101; and cf. *T. A.* v. 2. 87: —

> "For well I wot the empress never wags
> But in her company there is a Moor."

18. *Candle-wasters.* Those who sit up late, "burning the midnight oil;" but whether in revelry or in study has been matter of dispute. Schmidt favours the latter, making the passage = "drown grief with the wise saws of pedants and book-worms." Ingleby also explains it, "drown one's troubles in study." Whalley quotes Jonson, *Cynthia's Revels*, iii. 2: "Spoiled by a whoreson book-worm, a candle-waster." *Lamp-wasters* is similarly used in *The Antiquary*, iii.

19. *Patience.* A trisyllable, as in 272 below; but in 27 it is a dissyllable.

23. *Passion.* Emotion, sorrow. Cf. *Temp.* i. 2. 392: "Allaying both their fury and my passion;" *L. L. L.* v. 2. 118: "passion's solemn tears," *T. A.* i. 1. 106: "A mother's tears in passion for her son," etc.

24. *Preceptial medicine.* The medicine of precept or counsel. Cf. i. 3. 11 above: "a moral medicine."

28. *Wring.* Writhe; as in *Hen. V.* iv. 1. 253: —

> "Whose sense no more can feel
> But his own wringing;"

and *Cymb.* iii. 6. 79: "He wrings at some distress."

30. *Moral.* Ready to moralize. Cf. *Lear*, iv. 2. 58: "a moral fool." Schmidt makes it an adjective with this sense in *A. Y. L.* ii. 7. 29: —

"When I did hear
The motley fool thus moral on the time;"

but it is more likely a verb = moralize.

32. *Advertisement.* Admonition, moral instruction (Johnson). Cf. *A. W.* iv. 3. 240: "that is an advertisement to a proper maid in Florence, one Diana, to take heed;" 1 *Hen. IV.* iv. 1. 36: "Yet doth he give us bold advertisement." See also Baret, *Alvearie*, 1580: "A warning and admonition, an advertisement, a counsaile, an advisement or instruction, *admonitio*." So the verb = counsel, instruct; as in *M. for M.* i. 1. 42, v. 1. 388, and *Hen. VIII.* ii. 4. 178. Seymour explains the present passage: "my griefs are too violent to be expressed in words."

37. *The style of gods.* "An exalted language, such as we may suppose would be written by beings superior to human calamities" (Steevens). Cf. Beaumont and Fletcher, *Four Plays in One*:—

"Athens doth make women philosophers,
And sure their children chat the talk of gods."

38. *Push.* Rowe changed this to "pish," and Schmidt makes it an interjection = "pshaw, pish;" as in *T. of A.* iii. 6. 119: "Push! did you see my cap?" Boswell considers *made a push at* = contended against, defied; and cites from L'Estrange, "Away he goes, makes his push, stands the shock of battle," etc. Cf. *push* = onset, attack, in *J. C.* v. 2. 5: "And sudden push gives them the overthrow," etc. To me it seems absurd to regard *push* as the exclamation. Wright objects to Boswell's explanation that the philosophers treated accident and suffering with "indifference or contempt." Yes, that was the philosophers' way of "contending against or defying" them. Or, we may say that *making a push at them* is = thrusting them contemptuously aside. Cf. *daff me* in 78 below.

*Sufferance* = suffering; as in *Sonn.* 58. 7, *M. W.* iv. 2. 2, 2 *Hen. IV.* v. 4. 28, *T. and C.* i. 1. 28, etc.

46. *Good den.* See on iii. 2. 79 above.

55. *Beshrew.* A mild form of imprecation.

58. *Fleer.* Grin, sneer. Palsgrave defines it thus: "I fleere, I make an yvell countenaunce with the mouthe by uncoveryng of the tethe." Cf. *R. and J.* i. 5. 59: "To fleer and scorn at our solemnity." See also *L. L. L.* v. 2. 109 and *J. C.* i. 3. 117.

62. *To thy head.* Forby, in his *East Anglian Vocabulary*, says: "We say, I told him so to his *head*, not to his face, which is the usual phrase."

64. *Reverence.* That is, the "privilege of age" mentioned just above.

65. *Bruise of many days.* Cf. 2 *Hen. IV.* iv. 1. 100: "the bruises of the days before;" and *R. and J.* ii. 3. 37: "unbruised youth."

66. *Trial of a man.* Manly combat. For *trial* in this sense, cf. *Rich. II.* i. 1. 81, 151, i. 3. 99, iv. 1. 56, 71, 90, 106, etc.

71. *Fram'd.* Devised, fabricated. Cf. the use of the noun in iv. 1. 188 above.

75. *Fence.* Skill in fencing; as in 84 just below. In 3 *Hen. VI.* iv. 1. 44 ("fence impregnable") it means defence. Cf. the use of the verb = defend, in *Id.* iii. 3. 98: "fence the right."

76. *May of youth.* Cf. *Hen. V.* i. 2. 120: "the very May-morn of his youth." *Lustihood* = spirit, vigour. Cf. *T. and C.* ii. 2. 50: "lustihood deject." See also Spenser, *F. Q.* iii. 10. 45: "All day they daunced with great lusty-hedd;" *Shep. Kal. May:* "In lustihede and wanton meryment;" *Muiopotmos*, 61: "Yong Clarion, with vauntfull lustie-head," etc.

77. *Away! I will not have to do with you.* Here again Claudio's behaviour is unfeeling. "The prince, who is only an acquaintance of the father Leonato and his brother Antonio, nevertheless manifests a gentlemanly consideration and even tenderness in their family disaster; but Claudio is wholly untouched by the anguish of the old men at the loss of their child (she his own mistress too!) and at the stain upon their house. He has no

word of sympathy or commiseration; he wraps himself up in contempt of their aged and feeble defiance; and immediately after they have gone out, upon Benedick's entering, he jests upon the danger that he and the prince have escaped of having their 'noses snapped off with two old men without teeth'" (Clarke).

78. *Daff.* Put off, put aside. See on ii. 3. 168 above.

80. *He shall kill,* etc. "This *brother Antony* is the truest picture imaginable of human nature. He had assumed the character of a sage to comfort his brother, overwhelmed with grief for his only daughter's affront and dishonour; and had severely reproved him for not commanding his passion better on so trying an occasion. Yet, immediately after this, no sooner does he begin to suspect that his *age* and *valour* are slighted, but he falls into the most intemperate fit of rage himself. . . . This is copying nature with a penetration and exactness of judgment peculiar to Shakespeare" (Warburton).

82. *Win me and wear me.* "Proverbial = let him laugh that wins; originally = win me and have or enjoy me" (Schmidt). Cf. *Hen. V.* v. 2. 250: "thou hast me, if thou hast me, at the worst; and thou shalt wear me, if thou wear me, better and better," etc. See also ii. 1. 326 above.

84. *Foining.* A term in fencing = thrusting. Cf. *M. W.* ii. 3. 24: "To see thee fight, to see thee foin." See also 2 *Hen. IV.* ii. i. 17 and ii. 4. 252. We have *join* as a noun (= thrust) in *Lear,* iv. 6. 251. So in Cotgrave's *Fr. Dict.:* "*Coup d'estoc,* a thrust, foine, stockado, stab."

87. *Content yourself.* Compose yourself, keep your temper; as in *T. of S.* i. 1. 90, 203, ii. 1. 343, *T. and C.* iii. 2. 151, etc.

91. *Jacks.* Often used as a term of contempt. Cf. *M. of V.* iii. 4. 77: "these bragging Jacks;" 1 *Hen. IV.* iii. 3. 99: "the prince is a Jack, a sneak-cup," etc. See also i. 1. 185 above.

94. *Scambling.* Scrambling, shifty. Cf. *Hen. V.* i. 1. 4, v. 2. 218, etc. *Outfacing* = facing the matter out, impudent. Cf. *A. Y. L.* i. 3. 124:—

"As many other mannish cowards have
That do outface it with their semblances."

*Fashion-monging.* Foppish. We have *fashion-monger* in *R. and J.* ii. 4. 34. Halliwell-Phillipps cites Wilson, *Coblers Prophecie*, 1594: "the money-monging mate with all his knaverie."

95. *Cog.* "To deceive, especially by smooth lies" (Schmidt). Cf. *M. W.* iii. 3. 76: "I cannot cog, and say thou art this and that, like a many of these lisping hawthorn-buds, that come like women in men's apparel," etc. See also *Rich. III.* i. 3. 48, *T. and C.* v. 6. 11, *T. of A.* v. 1. 98, etc. For *flout*, see on i. 1. 162 above. *Deprave* = slander. Cf. *T. of A.* i. 2. 145: "Who lives that 's not depraved or depraves?" So *depravation* = detraction in *T. and C.* v. 2. 132.

96. *Anticly.* Spelt "antiquely" in the early eds., which use *antique* and *antick* interchangeably without regard to the meaning. *Outward hideousness* = "what in *Hen. V.* iii. 6. 81 is called 'a *horrid suit* of the camp'" (Steevens).

97. *Off.* The early eds. have "of;" corrected by Theobald. *Dangerous* = threatening.

102. *Wake.* Rouse, excite. Cf. *Rich. II.* i. 3. 132: "To wake our peace." See also *Rich. III.* i. 3. 288. Wright thinks this may be ironical, as "Leonato and his brother had shown no signs of patience." I suspect that *waking* patience suggested to S. the idea of changing it to *impatience;* or *will not* = have no wish to.

105. *Full of proof.* Fully proved. Cf. "full of rest" in 1 *Hen. IV.* iv. 3. 27 and *J. C.* iv. 3. 202, etc.

114. *Almost a fray.* Rowe omitted *almost*, but the repetition is quite in Shakespeare's manner.

115. *Had like to have had.* Come near having. For *with* = by, cf. ii. 1. 62, etc.

119. *I doubt.* I suspect. Cf. *M. W.* i. 4. 42: "I doubt he be not well," etc.

120. *In a false quarrel*, etc. Cf. 2 *Hen. VI.* iii. 2. 233: "Thrice is he arm'd that hath his quarrel just," etc.

123. *High-proof.* In a high degree; used by S. only here.

129. *As we do the minstrels.* Schmidt makes *draw* = draw the bow of a fiddle; others (more probably) = draw the instruments from their cases. For *pleasure*, cf. *M. W.* i. 1. 251: "what I do is to pleasure you;" *M. of V.* i. 3. 7: "will you pleasure me?" etc.

132. *Care killed a cat.* A familiar old proverb. Cf. Jonson, *Every Man in His Humour*, i. 3: "hang sorrow, care 'll kill a cat," etc.

135. *In the career*, etc. The metaphor is taken from the tilting-field, and is carried out by Claudio in his reply.

138. *Staff.* Lance; as in *Mach.* v. 3. 48, v. 7. 18, etc. *Broke cross* = broken crosswise, and not by a direct thrust. The former was considered disgraceful. Cf. *A. Y. L.* iii. 4. 44–48.

140. *By this light.* A common oath. Cf. *Temp.* ii. 2. 154, iii. 2. 17, *L. L. L.* iv. 3. 10, *K. John*, i. 1. 250, etc. See also v. 4. 92 below. So "by this good light" (*Temp.* ii. 2. 147, *W. T.* ii. 3. 182), "by this day and this light" (*Hen. V.* iv. 8. 66), "God's light!" (*2 Hen. IV.* ii. 4. 142, 159), etc.

142. *To turn his girdle.* "Large belts were worn with the buckle before, but for wrestling the buckle was turned behind, to give the adversary a fairer grasp at the girdle. To turn the buckle behind, therefore, was a challenge" (Holt White). Farmer cites a letter from Winwood's *Memorials*, in which Winwood, writing from Paris, in 1602, about an affront he received there from an Englishman, says: "I said what I spake was not to make him angry. He replied, if I were angry, I might turn the buckle of my girdle behind me." Cf. Cowley, *On the Government of Oliver Cromwell*: "The next month he swears by the living God, that he will turn them out of doors, and he does so in his princely way of threatening, bidding them turne the buckles of their girdles behind them." Halliwell-Phillipps explains the passage: "you may change your temper or humour, alter it to the opposite side." Some take it that the girdle is turned to get at the sword-hilt.

146. *How.* In whatever way. Cf. iii. 1. 60 above. *With what* = with whatever weapon.

147. *Do me right.* Give me satisfaction; that is, accept my challenge. Cf. i. 1. 245 above. *Protest* = proclaim; as in *Macb.* iii. 4. 105, etc.

155. *Capon.* Evidently used contemptuously. Schmidt suggests a play on the word (= *cap on*, that is, a fool's cap, or coxcomb); as in *Cymb.* ii. 1. 25: "You are cock and capon too; and you crow, cock, with your comb on." Cf. *C. of E.* iii. 1. 32.

156. *Curiously.* Carefully, nicely. Cf. *T. of S.* iv. 3. 144: "The sleeves curiously cut." *Naught* = good for nothing. The word is so spelled in the early eds. when it has this sense, but *nought* when = nothing.

157. The *woodcock* was supposed to have no brains, and was therefore a popular metaphor for a fool.

158. *Ambles.* Used contemptuously; as in 1 *Hen. IV.* iii. 2. 60, *R. and J.* i. 4. 11, etc.

163. *Just.* See on ii. 1. 28 above.

165. *A wise gentleman.* This seems to have been used ironically, as *wiseacre* is now. The irony, however, may be in the way it is spoken.

166. *He hath the tongues.* He knows foreign languages. Cf. *T. G. of V.* iv. 1. 33: —

> "2 *Outlaw.* Have you the tongues?
> *Valentine.* My youthful travel therein made me happy."

170. *Trans-shape.* Caricature, "spell backward" (iii. 1. 61 above).

172. *Properest.* Handsomest. Cf. ii. 3. 181 above.

176. *Deadly.* Implacably. Adjectives are often used as adverbs, especially those ending in *-ly*. Cf. *A. W.* v. 3. 117: "thou didst hate her deadly;" 3 *Hen. VI.* i. 4. 84: "I hate thee deadly;" *Cor.* ii. 1. 67: "they lie deadly," etc. See also *mannerly* in ii. 1. 77 above.

179. *God saw him*, etc. There is an allusion to *Genesis*, iii. 8.

181. *The savage bull's horns.* See i. 1. 263 fol.

201. *In his doublet and hose.* That is, without his cloak; Malone suggests, because going to fight a duel. Cf. *M. W.* iii. 1. 46, where Page says to Evans, "In your doublet and hose this raw rheumatic day!" and Evans replies, "There is reasons and causes for it," referring to the duel he is about to fight. Boswell believes that "the words are probably meant to express what Rosalind in *A. Y. L.* [iii. 2. 400] terms the 'careless desolation' of a lover." Perhaps we need not see more in the passage than a hit at Benedick's being in such profound earnest, having laid aside his wit as he might his cloak.

203. *A doctor.* A learned man. For *to* = in comparison to, cf. *Ham.* i. 2. 140: "Hyperion to a satyr," etc.

204. *Soft you.* Hold, stop; as often.

*Let me see.* The reading of the folio. The quarto has "let me be."

*Pluck up*, etc. Rouse thyself, my heart, and be serious, or think seriously. Cf. *T. of S.* iv. 3. 38: "Pluck up thy spirits."

208. *Reasons.* Some see here a pun on *reasons* and *raisins*, as in 1 *Hen. IV.* ii. 4. 264: "If reasons were as plenty as blackberries." There is no doubt that *reasons* was pronounced like *raisins*. Cf. the pun on *meat* (pronounced *mate*) and *maid* in *T. G. of V.* i. 2. 68.

213. *Hearken after.* Inquire concerning. Cf. *Rich. III.* i. 1. 54: "He hearkens after prophecies and dreams."

225. *Division.* Disposition, arrangement; as in *Oth.* i. 1. 23: "the division of a battle."

226. *Well suited.* "That is, one meaning is put into many different dresses; the Prince having asked the same question in four modes of speech" (Johnson). Cf. *Hen. V.* iv. 2. 53: "Description cannot suit itself in words," etc.

228. *Who.* Whom. Cf. i. 1. 213 above.

229. *To your answer.* To answer for your conduct; that is, in a legal sense. Cf. *Hen. VIII.* iv. 2. 18: —

"Arrested him at York, and brought him forward,
As a man sorely tainted, to his answer," etc.

230. *Cunning.* Knowing, wise. Cf. *T. of S.* ii. 1. 56: "Cunning in music and the mathematics," etc.

235. *Wisdoms.* See on iv. 1. 186 above, and cf. *Ham.* i. 2. 15: "Your better wisdoms," etc.

238. *Incensed.* Instigated. Cf. *W. T.* v. 1. 61: —

"She had, and would incense me
To murder her I married."

See also *Rich. III.* iii. 1. 152, iii. 2. 29, etc. Nares takes the word in the present passage, and in *Rich. III.* to be properly *insense* (= to put sense into, instruct, inform), "a provincial expression still current in Staffordshire, and probably Warwickshire;" but he is probably wrong.

241. *Upon.* See on iv. 1. 222 above, and cf. 251 just below.

247. *Whiles.* See on iv. 1. 218 above.

249. *Practice.* Plotting. See on iv. 1. 187 above.

250. *Compos'd.* Wholly made up. Cf. *Temp.* iii. 1. 9: —

"O, she is
Ten times more gentle than her father 's crabbed,
And he 's compos'd of harshness."

253. *That I lov'd it first.* That is, *in* which I loved it first. The preposition is often thus omitted in relative sentences. Cf. v. 2. 48: "let me go with that I came" (for).

264. *Art thou,* etc. The folio has "Art thou thou the slaue," and some modern eds. follow it in repeating *thou;* but this injures the metre and does not add to the sense. Furness, however, thinks it expresses "astonishment and utmost horror."

271. *Bethink you of it.* Think of it, consider it. Cf. *T. N.* iii. 4. 327: "hath better bethought him of his quarrel;" *Rich. III.* ii. 2. 96: —

"Madam, bethink you, like a careful mother,
Of the young prince your son," etc.

272. *Patience.* A trisyllable; as in 19 above.

272. *Impose me to.* Impose on me; which is elsewhere the form of expression in S. Cf. *L. L. L.* iii. 1. 130: "impose on thee nothing but this," etc.

282. *Possess.* Inform. Cf. *M. of V.* i. 3. 65: "Is he yet possess'd How much you would?"

284. *Labour.* For the transitive use, cf. *Rich. III.* i. 4. 253: "That he would labour my delivery," etc. *Invention* = imagination. Cf. *Hen. V.* prol. 2: "the brightest heaven of invention," etc. The word is here a quadrisyllable.

285. *Hang her an epitaph,* etc. It was the custom of the time to affix memorial verses to the *herse* or canopy of black cloth erected temporarily over the tomb. Ben Jonson's well-known tribute to the Countess of Pembroke, "Underneath this sable hearse," etc., is said to have been written for such a purpose. Cf. iv. 1. 206 above.

291. *And she alone,* etc. The poet seems to have forgotten that he has given Antonio a *son* in i. 2. 2 above. See on i. 1. 295 above. Moreover, Claudio would be likely to know that Hero's uncle had no daughter.

298. *Naughty.* See on iv. 2. 74 above.

300. *Pack'd.* Implicated, a confederate. Cf. *C. of E.* v. 1. 219: "The goldsmith there, were he not pack'd with her," etc.

304. *By her.* About her. Cf. *M. of V.* i. 2. 60: "How say you by the French lord?" *L. L. L.* iv. 3. 150: "I would not have him know so much by me," etc.

310. *A lock.* Cf. iii. 3. 170 above. Prynne, in 1628, wrote a treatise entitled "The Unlovelinesse of Love-lockes, or a discourse proving the wearing of a locke to be unseemly;" and in his *Histriomastix* he speaks of "long, unshorne, love-provoking haire, and lovelockes growne now too much in fashion with comly pages, youthes, and lewd, effeminate, ruffianly persons."

*Borrows money in God's name.* That is, begs it; alluding, according to Steevens, to *Proverbs,* xix. 17, but this is doubtful. Halliwell-Phillipps says that this phrase was used in the counter-

feit passports of the beggars, as appears from Dekker's *English Villanies*. He also cites Percivale's *Dictionarie in Spanish and English*, 1599: "*Pordioséros*, men that aske for God's sake, beggers."

311. *Hath used.* Hath used to do, has made a practice of. Cf. *J. C.* i. 1. 14: "a trade that I may use with a safe conscience," etc.

320. *God save the foundation!* "The customary phrase employed by those who received alms at the gates of religious houses" (Steevens).

335. *Lewd.* Vile, base; as in *Rich. II.* i. 1. 90, 1 *Hen. IV.* iii. 2. 13, etc. Cf. *Acts*, xvii. 5.

Scene II. — 6. There is a play on *style* and *stile*, and on *come over* in the senses of *surpass* and *get over*. Cf. *L. L. L.* i. 1. 201: "Well, sir, be it as the style shall give us cause to climb in the merriness;" *Id.* iv. 1. 98: —

> "*Boyet.* I am much deceiv'd but I remember the style.
> *Princess.* Else your memory is bad, going o'er it erewhile."

10. *Shall I always keep below stairs?* That is, in the servants' room, and never get married and be a mistress.

16. *I give thee the bucklers.* I yield thee the victory. Steevens quotes Greene, *Coney-Catching*, 1592: "At this his master laught, and was glad, for further advantage, to yield the bucklers to his prentise;" and Holland's *Pliny*: "it goeth against his stomach to yeeld the gauntlet and give the bucklers."

21. *Pikes.* "The circular *bucklers* of the 16th century, now called more commonly *targets*, had frequently a central spike, or *pike*, usually affixed by a screw. It was probably found convenient to detach this spike occasionally; for instance, in cleaning the buckler, etc. *Vice* is the French *vis*, a screw" (Thoms).

26. *The god of love,* etc. The beginning of an old song by William Elderton (Ritson).

32. *Carpet-mongers.* Carpet knights, effeminate persons. Cf.

*T. N.* iii. 4. 258: "He is knight, dubbed with unhatched rapier, and on carpet consideration."

37. *No rhyme to 'lady' but 'baby.'* This rhyme occurs in the *Musarum Deliciæ*, quoted by Halliwell-Phillipps: —

> "Whilst all those naked bedlams, painted babies,
> Spottified faces, and Frenchified ladies."

*Innocent* = silly. The noun sometimes meant an idiot; as in *Lear*, iii. 6. 8, etc.

41. *Festival terms.* In distinction from everyday language. Cf. *M. W.* iii. 2. 69: "he writes verses, he speaks holiday;" and 1 *Hen. IV.* i. 3. 46: "With many holiday and lady terms." See also *M. of V.* ii. 9. 98: "highday wit," etc.

48. *I came.* That is, came *for*. See on v. 1. 253 above.

56. *His.* Its; as often before *its* came into general use.

58. *Undergoes.* Is subject to.

59. *Subscribe him.* Write him down, proclaim him.

79. *Of good neighbours.* "That is, when men were not envious, but every one gave another his due" (Warburton).

84. *Question.* That 's the question. Some eds. print "Question?" = do you ask the question?

85. *Rheum.* Tears. Cf. *K. John*, iii. 1. 22: "Why holds thine eye that lamentable rheum?" (see also iv. 1. 33 and iv. 3. 108); *Cor.* v. 6. 46: "a few drops of women's rheum;" *Ham.* ii. 2. 529: "with bisson rheum," etc. *Clamour* refers to the ringing of the bell (Schmidt).

86. *Don Worm.* Conscience was formerly represented under the symbol of a worm. Cf. *Rich. III.* i. 3. 222: "The worm of conscience still begnaw thy soul!" In an account of the expenses connected with one of the old Coventry mysteries, we find "Item, payd to ij wormes of conscience, xvj. d." Wright refers to *Mark*, ix. 48.

97. *Yonder 's old coil.* In modern slang, "there 's a high old time." For *old* as a "colloquial intensive," cf. *M. of V.* iv. 2. 15: "old swearing;" *Macb.* ii. 3. 2: "old turning of the key," etc.

*Coil* = turmoil, confusion. Cf. Cotgrave, *Fr. Dict.*: "*Faire le diable de vauuert*, to play reaks, to keep an old coile, a horrible stirre." See also on iii. 3. 93 above.

99. *Abused.* Deceived. Cf. *Temp.* v. 1. 112: "Or some enchanted trifle to abuse me," etc.

102. *Presently.* Immediately. See on i. 1. 88 above.

Scene III. — 3. *Done to death.* A common phrase in old writers. Cf. *Promos and Cassandra*, 1578: "Is my Andrugio done to death?" Marlowe, *Lust's Dominion*: "Thinking her own son is done to death;" Chapman, *Homer*: "Hector (in Chi) to death is done," etc. See also 2 *Hen. VI.* iii. 2. 179: "Why, Warwick, who should do the duke to death?"

5. *Guerdon.* Recompense. Cf. *L. L. L.* iii. 1. 170: "There 's thy guerdon." S. uses the noun only twice; but he has the verb in 2 *Hen. VI.* i. 4. 49 and 3 *Hen. VI.* iii. 3. 191.

8. *With.* Referring to the *cause* of the *shame*. Cf. ii. 1. 62 above.

11. *Music.* Musicians; as often. Cf. *L. L. L.* v. 2. 211: "Play, music, then!" *M. of V.* v. 1. 98: "It is your music, madam, of the house;" *Hen. VIII.* iv. 2. 94: "Bid the music leave; they are harsh to me," etc.

13. *Knight.* Cf. *A. W.* i. 3. 120: "Dian no queen of virgins, that would suffer her poor knight surprised, without rescue in the first assault or ransom afterward." Malone quotes *Two Noble Kinsmen*:

> "O sacred, shadowy, cold, and constant queen,
> . . . who to thy female knights
> Allow'st no more blood than will make a blush,
> Which is their order's robe," etc.

For the rhyme of *night* and *knight*, cf. *M. W.* ii. 1. 15, 16.

21. *Heavily, heavily.* The quarto reading; the folio has "*Heauenly, heauenly*," which is adopted by some editors. "Uttered heavenly" is explained as = "expelled (outer-ed) by the power of Heaven." In *Ham.* ii. 2. 309, the folio has the same misprint of *heavenly* for *heavily*. Halliwell-Phillipps (followed by others) ex-

plains the passage thus: "The slayers of the virgin knight are performing a solemn requiem on the body of Hero, and they invoke Midnight and the shades of the dead to assist, until *her* death be *uttered*, that is, proclaimed, published, sorrowfully, sorrowfully." For myself, I prefer the other explanation, which gives to *uttered* its original sense. The meaning then is "till death be overcome or vanquished to the utterance" (Furness), or utterly. For *utterance* in this sense of *utmost* or *extremity* (the Fr. *outrance*), see *Macb.* iii. 1. 72: "champion me to the utterance;" and *Cymb.* iii. 1. 73: "behoves me keep at utterance."

22. *Now, unto*, etc. Both quarto and folio assign this speech to "*Lo.*" (*Lord*), but Rowe restored it to Claudio, to whom it clearly belongs.

25. *Wolves*. Associated with night, as in *M. N. D.* v. 1. 379, *Macb.* ii. 1. 53, etc. The lines that follow are one of the most exquisite of Shakespeare's word-pictures of sunrise. Cf. *R. and J.* ii. 3. 1–4: —

> "The grey-eyed morn smiles on the frowning night,
> Chequering the eastern clouds with streaks of light;"

and Milton's "dappled dawn" in *L'Allegro*.

29. *Several*. Separate. Cf. its use as a noun (= individual) in *W. T.* i. 2. 226, etc.

30. *Weeds*. Garments, dress. Cf. *M. N. D.* ii. 1. 256: "Weed wide enough to wrap a fairy in;" *Id.* ii. 2. 71: "Weeds of Athens he doth wear," etc.

32. *Speed 's*. That is, speed us (3d person, imperative); Thirlby's emendation of the "speeds" of the early eds. "Claudio could not know, without being a prophet, that this new proposed match should have any luckier event than that designed with Hero; certainly, therefore, this should be a wish." Malone objects to the contraction *speed 's;* but cf. *W. T.* i. 2. 91: "I prithee tell me; cram 's with praise, and make 's," etc. See also *Id.* i. 2. 94: "you may ride 's;" *A. and C.* ii. 7. 134: "give 's your hand," etc. This

contraction of *us* is frequent in the latest plays, but very rare in the earliest, except in the familiar *let 's*.

33. *Render'd up this woe.* Offered this woful tribute. Cf. *T. A.* i. 1. 160: —

> "Lo! at this tomb my tributary tears
> I render for my brethren's obsequies;"

and *K. John*, v. 7. 110: "O, let us pay the time but needful woe!"

Scene IV.—3. *Upon.* On account of. See on iv. 1. 222 above.

6. *Question.* Inquiry, investigation.

7. *Sort.* Turn out. Cf. iv. 1. 239 above.

8. *By faith enforc'd.* Compelled by my pledge, obliged in honour. Cf. *T. G. of V.* i. 2. 63: "inward joy enforc'd my heart to smile," etc.

17. *Confirm'd countenance.* Steady face. Cf. *Cor.* i. 3. 65: "has such a confirmed countenance."

28. *For.* As for. Cf. iii. 2. 95 above.

30. *State.* The reading of the early eds. changed by Johnson to "estate." The folio prints "I'th state." *Marriage* is probably a trisyllable; as in *M. of V.* ii. 9. 13, *T. of S.* iii. 2. 142, *R. of L.* 221, etc.

34. *Assembly.* A quadrisyllable here. Cf. *Cor.* i. 1. 159: "You, the great toe of this assembly." See on iii. 1. 80 above.

37. *To marry with.* Cf. *M. N. D.* i. 1. 40: "to marry with Demetrius," etc.

38. *Ethiope.* Cf. *M. N. D.* iii. 2. 257, *R. and J.* i. 5. 48, etc.

43. *Bull.* See on v. 1. 182 above.

45. *Europa.* Europe; with an obvious play upon the word. For the allusion, cf. *M. W.* v. 5. 4 and *T. of S.* i. 1. 173.

59. *Like of me.* Cf. *P. P.* 212: —

> "It was a lordling's daughter, the fairest one of three,
> That liked of her master as well as well might be;"

*A. W.* ii. 3. 131: —

"thou dislikest
Of virtue for the name," etc.

62. *Certainer.* For the form, cf. "perfecter" in *Cor.* ii. 1. 91, "horrider" in *Cymb.* iv. 2. 331, etc.

63. *Defil'd.* The quarto reading; the folio omits the word. Collier reads "belied," on the ground that Hero would not be likely to speak of herself as *defiled*. Of course Hero meant defiled by slander (cf. what Leonato says immediately after), and now that her innocence was established no one present could misunderstand her.

66. *Whiles.* See on iv. 1. 218 above.

67. *Qualify.* Moderate, abate. Cf. *Lear*, i. 2. 176: "till some little time hath qualified the heat of his displeasure," etc.

68. *After that.* This use of *that* as a "conjunctional affix" is very common in S.

69. *Largely.* "At large" (*M. N. D.* v. 1. 152, etc.), in detail.

70. *Familiar.* A quadrisyllable.

71. *Presently.* See on i. 1. 88 above.

72. *Soft and fair.* A common phrase of the time. Cf. *soft you*, v. 1. 204 above.

82. *No such matter.* See on ii. 3. 215 above.

89. *Writ.* Used often by S. both as past tense and participle; but we have *written* just above. See on *spoke*, iv. 1. 94.

90. *Affection unto.* Love for. Cf. *Lear*, i. 2. 94: "my affection to your honour," etc.

93. *By this light.* See on v. 1. 140 above. Cf. *by this good day* just below.

96. *Consumption.* The only instance in which S. uses the word apparently in its modern sense (Bucknill). In *T. of A.* iv. 3. 151 and *Lear*, iv. 6. 131, the meaning is either different or less definite. In 2 *Hen. IV.* i. 2. 264 (the only other instance in S.) there is a play upon the word, but the reference to the disease is not clear.

97. *Peace*, etc. Cf. *Rich. II.* v. 1. 95: "One kiss shall stop our mouths," etc. See also ii. 1. 307 above.

101. *Flout.* Mock, jeer. See on i. 1. 185 above.

103. *Beaten with brains.* That is, mocked. Cf. *L. L. L.* v. 2. 263: "dry-beaten with pure scoff." Schmidt cites *Ham.* ii. 2. 376: "much throwing about of brains" (= much satirical controversy).

*He shall wear nothing handsome about him.* The meaning is not clear. Furness suggests: "If a man is to live in fear of an epigram, he will not dare to put on even a handsome suit of clothes, — how much less, to marry a beautiful woman." Perhaps it is simply = "He is n't much of a man." Cf. iv. 2. 88 above.

110. *In that.* Inasmuch as. Cf. *A. Y. L.* i. 1. 50: "in that you are the first-born," etc.

114. *Double-dealer.* One who is unfaithful in love or wedlock.

116. *Exceeding.* For the adverbial use, see on ii. 3. 158 above, and cf. iii. 4. 25, 51, etc.

121. *Of my word.* Upon my word.

123. *More reverend.* That is, because it is used by elderly people. The tipped staff was one of the usual accompaniments of old age (Halliwell-Phillipps). Cf. Chaucer, *C. T.* 7322: "His felaw [one of the begging friars] had a staf typped with horn." In *horn* the well-worn joke about the risks of married life is obvious.

126. *With.* By; as in ii. 1. 62, iii. 1. 66, 79, and v. 1. 116 above.

128. *Brave.* Becoming, fitting (Schmidt); or perhaps with a touch of irony, as often. Cf. *Temp.* iii. 2. 12, *A. Y. L.* iii. 4. 43, *Ham.* ii. 2. 611, etc.

# APPENDIX

## The Title of the Play

This play belongs to that remarkable trio which Furnivall has called "the three sunny or sweet-time comedies," *As You Like It* and *Twelfth Night* being the other two. They all belong to the same period, having almost certainly been written in 1599 or 1600. Though different in plot and varied in characterization, they are strikingly similar in tone and temper. They are the very perfection of comedy, overflowing with wit and humour, full of joy and merriment, with no greater mingling of sorrow and sadness than, by force of contrast, serves to give zest to the pleasure they afford; and all this sorrow and sadness is but the passing cloud that for the moment dims the prevailing sunshine. If it threatens to be disastrous to any of the personages in the drama, it soon proves to be "much ado about nothing."

This suggests a brief reference to the title of the play, which applies equally well to the joyous and amusing portions of the story. Wherever there is much ado, it turns out to be really for nothing. The merry trick by which Benedick and Beatrice are to be made to love each other, though devised with much ingenuity and carried out with much skill and cunning, was after all much ado about nothing; for the bachelor and the maid were ready to fall in love from the start, and Cupid would have brought about the inevitable result without the intervention of the tricksters. As Mrs. Jameson has remarked, "the very first words uttered by Beatrice are an inquiry after Benedick, though expressed with her usual arch impertinence." "Signor Montanto," or Signor Bully, as she might call him now, is evidently in her thoughts, and she is eager to learn

what has been his fortune in the military expedition. He also has a liking for her, as appears from his telling Claudio that, "an she were not possessed with a fury," she excels Hero "as much in beauty as the first of May does the last of December." These and kindred foreshadowings of the love that is to be roused to a conscious flame by the tricks of their friends were unquestionably inserted to suggest the true explanation of what comes to pass; namely, Benedick and Beatrice are both ready to fall in love, but neither has the slightest idea of the other's feeling. As soon as each is made to believe that the other loves, the responsive passion, already in existence though not acknowledged even to themselves, springs at once into full life.

The witty sparring between Benedick and Beatrice is another of these illustrations. The burden of their raillery is their resolution never to marry. Benedick will never put his neck in the matrimonial yoke. Beatrice is upon her knees every morning with a prayer that no husband may be sent her until men are made of some other metal than clay. Adam's sons are her brethren, and she will never be guilty of violating the ecclesiastical injunction against wedding her near kindred. The very intensity and exaggeration of these protestations show that the subject of marriage is always in her thoughts, and might lead us to suspect that in the end all this talk will prove much ado about nothing.

As I have already intimated, the plot of Don John to ruin Hero, though elaborated with diabolical ingenuity, proves another illustration of the title; and so does the passionate grief of Leonato over her supposed infidelity, and Claudio's tribute to her memory in the church after he has learned that she is innocent, but supposes that she has died from excess of grief at the ignominy to which she has been so unjustly subjected.

Even the minor incidents of the plot are in keeping with the title of the play; like Claudio's suspicion that Don Pedro has played him false and wooed Hero for himself. These I will not dwell upon, but leave the reader to trace them out if he will. As another

has said, "the title is admirably suggestive of the character of the piece, which introduces us to a society whose atmosphere is one of perpetual holiday; where everybody, from high to low, having time enough on hand and to spare, indulges in leisurely circuitous fashions of speed and action, productive of mistakes and misapprehensions — in short, of much ado which, in the long run, always proves to be about nothing."

## Comments on Some of the Characters

Benedick. — All the critics unite in doing homage to the polished wit and manly character of Benedick. In regard to his wit I am inclined to agree with Charles Cowden-Clarke that he is more than a match for Beatrice with her quick and sharp raillery. It is true that she always has the last word, but I think that she owes the seeming victory to his chivalrous gallantry. He knows when to stop, for he is a gentleman; she never does — probably because she is not a gentleman, but, as Don Pedro calls her, "a pleasant-spirited lady," full of merry mischief and feeling no restraint that should prevent her from indulging her love of banter to the utmost.

It is to be noted that Benedick, though he is doubtless aware that he is witty, has no fancy to be considered a "funny man." He is never more angry than when Beatrice has compared him to a professional jester. He is too much of a man, of a gentleman, to be willing to be regarded in the light of a mere buffoon. He is a wit, but something more than a wit — not that sort of "society man" whose chief title to social distinction is the gift of furnishing amusement by his quips and quibbles, or his skill in the quick and brilliant fence of repartee, but a refined gentleman with whom this intellectual exercise is mere by-play, and whose real claim to reputation in society rests upon sterling qualities of mind and heart.

But the gallant gentleman has often — I might say, almost always, except by the best actors — been degraded to this rôle of a

mere "funny man" on the stage and by public readers. The comic side of the character has been exaggerated to the verge of burlesque, while his refinement and nobility of nature have been ignored or obscured. This of course "tickles the ears of the groundlings" — the vulgar portion of the audience — but it cannot fail to make the judicious grieve.

Beatrice has not unfrequently suffered in the same way at the hands, or the tongues, of inferior actresses and the ordinary run of public readers. The same is more or less true of all dramatic characters not distinctly comic but having a comic side, or some trait or feature which is amusing or ludicrous. It requires nice discrimination on the part of the actor or reader to do full justice to all phases of such characters — to show fairly the worthy or serious side, and to avoid overdoing the humorous side. The temptation is strong to set forth the latter too coarsely, so that it becomes a mere caricature for popular effect.

It is interesting, by the way, to compare the soliloquies of Benedick and Beatrice after they have been caught in the net spread for them by their mischievous friends. The speech of Benedick is in prose, and it is a significant example of Shakespeare's use of prose. There is sentiment in it, but, as is natural enough for a man, the comical side of the situation forces itself upon his attention. He pledges the return of the love at once, as Beatrice does: "Love me! why, it must be requited;" but the fun that his friends will make of it instantly occurs to him. He dwells most amusingly upon the risk he is running, but decides that he will not regard it. He may chance "to have some odd quirks and remnants of wit broken upon" him, but that shall not keep him from the career of his humour. "I must not seem proud," he says; "happy are they that hear their detractions and can put them to mending" — the exact counterpart to the resolution of Beatrice to correct *her* faults for her lover's sake.

The soliloquy of Beatrice (see p. 15 above), equally sympathetic and affectionate, is in verse. This is true to feminine nature, and

strikingly illustrates the poet's wonderful insight into the heart of woman. At such a moment, when the light of love — such love — first breaks upon her, there is no room in that heart for anything but the sacred joy of the revelation and the holy consecration of the responsive passion. The humorous aspect of the situation, if such there be, cannot occur to her as it may to a man. That moment in which she pledges her love to the man who loves her is no less serious, no less solemn, than that in which she confirms the pledge at the altar.

BEATRICE. — To what I have already said of Beatrice in the introduction (p. 13 fol.) it may be added that she reminds us of Katherine the Shrew, who is not the vulgar vixen that some critics have made her, but a true warm-hearted woman who comes to love the man that has wooed and won her in such unconventional fashion. Kate, however, has serious faults before she is "tamed," while from the worst of these Beatrice is free. Kate is really something of a shrew at first, owing to her father's misapprehension of her nature and to her mealy-mouthed sister's companionship; and Petruchio restores her to her better self by the peculiar but judicious discipline to which he subjects her. Beatrice is more fortunate in her surroundings — in the love of her uncle and the sympathy of her cousin. Her shrewishness, if it may be called so, is only affected. Antonio says of her, "Faith, she 's too curst" (that is, too shrewish), but she merely appears so. Like Benedick she professes to be averse to marriage and breaks many jests on the subject, but it is solely because the fated lover has not appeared — or, rather, that she has not recognized him as such. She had rather hear her dog bark at a crow than a man swear he loves her, but how promptly she welcomes the right man when she is led to believe that he loves her, and would swear to it but for his fear of her sharp tongue! There is something charmingly characteristic in the speech we have already considered, where she adds to the promise of requiting Benedick's love "*Taming* my *wild heart* to thy loving hand." She has just said, "Contempt, farewell, and

maiden pride, adieu!" She accepts the reproof that Hero and Margaret have given her in their talk in the garden, when she supposes they are not aware she is listening: —

> "But Nature never fram'd a woman's heart
> Of prouder stuff than that of Beatrice;
> Disdain and scorn ride sparkling in her eyes,
> Misprising what they look on, and her wit
> Values itself so highly that to her
> All matter else seems weak."

And when she hears that this habit of hers has been the means of keeping the man whom she admires, while she rails at him, from declaring his passionate love for her, she blames herself overmuch. She has been proud and disdainful, but she will be so no longer. She will tame her wild heart to the loving hand of the man who has suffered so keenly on her account. This resolution is enough of itself to prove that her feeling for Benedick is now something more than friendly. Love alone could lead her to see her faults, and to resolve to tame herself that she might be worthy of love in return. Kate could not thus tame herself, but when her husband has tamed her she is as loving a wife as Beatrice must have proved.

Beatrice, like Kate, is a motherless girl; and so are nearly all of Shakespeare's young heroines — among them Miranda, Portia (*Merchant of Venice*), Rosalind and Celia, Viola, Ophelia, Desdemona, Cordelia, Isabel (*Measure for Measure*), and Helena (*All's Well*). The only noteworthy exceptions (leaving out of account the historical plays), are Perdita (*Winter's Tale*), Juliet (*Romeo and Juliet*), and Marina (*Pericles*). Imogen (*Cymbeline*) has a stepmother. In the plays with a mother, the story requires the presence of the character. In the others the omission may be accounted for — partially at least — by the fact that, as all female parts were in the days of Shakespeare performed by boys or young men, it was more difficult to find good actors for them than for the male parts. The young players of female parts were available only

until their voices had changed, when new boys or youths must be found to take their places.

CLAUDIO. — Shakespeare not unfrequently gives some of his loveliest maidens to husbands who are not worthy of them; and Hero is a notable instance of the kind, like Helena in *All 's Well*, Julia in *The Two Gentlemen of Verona*, Hermione in *The Winter's Tale*, and Imogen in *Cymbeline*. We wonder that Hero could have loved Claudio. If she had not been one of these soft, sweet, affectionate young creatures who are apt to see the ideal of their hearts in the first good-looking young fellow they get intimately acquainted with, it could never have come to pass. We all have known such women, and we know what sad mistakes they often make in their marriages.

The one redeeming trait in Claudio is a high sense of honour; and even that we are half compelled to regard as merely conventional when we attempt to reconcile it with the rest of his character. He loves Hero, or fancies that he does, but has not the spirit or courage to woo her for himself. Be it noted that it is not because, like Miles Standish, he is "a blunt old captain, a man not of words but of actions, a maker of war, and not a maker of phrases;" for is he not the "exquisite Claudio," and can he not tell the story of his love in sufficiently rhetorical style to Don Pedro when he asks his help in gaining the "only heir" of Leonato? It was not without design that Shakespeare made him begin his talk with the question, "Hath Leonato any *son*, my lord?" and Don Pedro apparently understood the point of the question when he replied, "No child but Hero; she 's his only heir." I believe that no commentator has called attention to the fact that the question was an absurd one, for Claudio says in his very next speech that he had been acquainted with Hero before he went on the expedition which has just ended, and had then

> "look'd upon her with a soldier's eye,
> That lik'd, but had a rougher task in hand
> Than to drive liking to the name of love."

Of course he must have known whether she had a brother or not. Shakespeare must have introduced the question for some special reason, and the answer indicates plainly enough what the reason was. Claudio had an eye to the lady's fortune, and wants to be sure about that before he makes love to her by proxy.

But why does he make love by proxy? I suspect that it is because he is morbidly afraid of the possible refusal. He is not willing to risk that mortification in his own person, and therefore delegates the business to his friend, who consents to do it for him.

One or two other things in this talk with Don Pedro are to be noted, though I am not aware that they have been considered worthy of comment before.

In one of his first speeches about his love for Hero, he begins thus: "If my passion change not shortly," etc. Does a true lover ever admit the possibility of change in his passion? He would resent the insinuation that such a thing could be. As Shakespeare himself has said in the 116th *Sonnet*,

> "Love is not love
> Which alters when it alteration finds,
> Or bends with the remover to remove.
> O, no! it is an ever-fixed mark
> That looks on tempests and is never shaken;
> It is the star to every wandering bark,
> Whose worth 's unknown, although his height be taken.
> Love 's not Time's fool, though rosy lips and cheeks
> Within his bending sickle's compass come;
> Love alters not with his brief hours and weeks,
> But bears it out even to the edge of doom."

A moment later Don Pedro says, in response to Claudio's declaration of love for Hero, "Amen, if you love her, for the lady is very well worthy." Claudio replies, "You say this to fetch me in, my lord" — or, as we should say, "to draw me out." It is an illustration of the sneaking, suspicious nature of the man. He is constantly in fear of being made fun of. Here he suspects his best

friend of wishing to draw him out that he may laugh at him afterwards. No wonder that Don Pedro answers almost indignantly, "By my troth, I speak my thought" — that is, "I say just what I mean, with no ulterior purpose."

In the next scene, when the villain Don John tells Claudio that Don Pedro has betrayed him and wooed Hero for himself, Claudio believes the falsehood at once: —

> "'T is certain so; the prince wooes for himself.
> Friendship is constant in all other things
> Save in the office and affairs of love."

It is even more to his discredit that he is so ready to believe the evil reports concerning Hero, though they come from the same disreputable and suspicious source as the falsehood about Don Pedro. I believe that some critic has expressed surprise that Don Pedro should have been so easily deceived by Don John's monstrous and quite incredible charges against the gentle Hero; but when her lover, who should have defended her or refused to distrust her purity until absolute and incontrovertible evidence of her wantonness had been produced, has not a word to say in her favour, it is not surprising that Don Pedro accepts his view of the case. The fact that he has acted as Claudio's proxy in the wooing of Hero, and therefore feels a certain responsibility for bringing about the match, would naturally make him hesitate to take the lady's part, even if he had doubts concerning her guilt. When Claudio first hears Don John's story, his response is only "May this be so?" instead of the indignant "This cannot be!" which would be the instinctive exclamation of a true lover. Don Pedro, less ready to distrust Hero, says, "I will not think it." Don John replies that he will convince him that it is true by the evidence of his own eyes. Claudio at once declares that, if he sees anything why he should not marry her, he will disgrace her publicly before the marriage altar. The vindictive brutality of this resolution needs no comment; and Claudio carries it out in the most cold-blooded manner. His final utterance before leaving the church is characteristic: —

> "For thee I 'll lock up all the gates of love,
> And on my eyelids shall conjecture hang,
> To turn all beauty into thoughts of harm,
> And never shall it more be gracious."

Since Hero has proved unchaste, he will be suspicious of all women. "On my eyelids shall conjecture hang!" That is his easily besetting sin. The slightest hint of evil leads him instantly to conjecture the worst.

Later in the play his treatment of Leonato and Antonio is contemptuous and unfeeling in the extreme. He either cannot see, or seeing cannot sympathize with their deep affliction at the bereavement and domestic disgrace they have suffered. There could not be clearer proof that he does not seriously feel his own loss. A moment afterwards, when Benedick comes in, Claudio says to him: "We had like to have had our two noses snapped off with two old men without teeth." This is in the same unfeeling vein. Don Pedro says nothing like it, and in the preceding interview with Leonato and Antonio his tone was considerate and conciliatory. "Nay, do not quarrel with us, good old man" are his expostulatory words, while every utterance of Claudio is a sneer, calculated to inflame their grief and wrath rather than to allay them.

After referring to the quarrel with the old men, Claudio says to Benedick, "We have been up and down to seek thee; for we are high-proof melancholy, and would fain have it beaten away. Wilt thou use thy wit?" This jocose allusion to his feelings confirms our impression of his heartlessness. The lover, whose bride has been discarded at the altar for alleged unchastity, feels only a "high-proof melancholy" which Benedick's witty talk will serve to relieve or dispel!

When Hero is proved innocent Claudio seems to feel something like genuine compunction for his hasty repudiation of the maiden. "Yet sinn'd I only in mistaking," he urges. But when Leonato proposes that Claudio shall take a niece whom he has never seen in place of the daughter whose death he has caused by

his rash suspicions, the readiness with which the frivolous fellow accepts the offer is in keeping with all that we know of him. The remark of Leonato that "she alone is heir to both of us" may have had something to do with his prompt decision. He goes through with the ceremony in memory of Hero in the church, hanging a funeral elegy on her tomb; but his words as he leaves the sacred edifice indicate that his thoughts are with the living bride rather than the lost one: —

> "And Hymen now with better issue speed 's
> Than this for whom we render'd up this woe!"

May I have better luck in the second marriage than in the first! A poor shallow creature this! Hero is much too good for him, and I seriously doubt whether even her saintly influence ever made a true man of him.

I am aware that certain critics take a different view of Claudio's character, but I cannot believe that they have given due consideration to the accumulated evidence against him, while there is so little that can be said in his favour. He has been a good soldier, as we learn in the first scene; and as I have said he appears to have a high sense of honour, as might be expected in a soldier; but as a lover and a friend he is disloyal, and as a man he is deficient in all the finer traits of manly character.

Dogberry and Verges. — Coleridge remarks that Dogberry and Verges are "forced into the service of the plot when any other less ingeniously absurd watchmen would have answered the mere necessities of the action." "On the contrary," as another critic has said, "the necessities of the action absolutely demand these twin specimens of blundering officialdom, for had they been less given to illogical and perverse circumlocution of speech, the exposure of Hero would have been avoided, and with it the occasion that finally unites Benedick and Beatrice. With the secret already in their possession the two worthies wait on Leonato on the very morning of the marriage; but they are so occupied in each tak-

ing the word out of the other's mouth, and in bestowing all their tediousness upon his worship, that before they can come to the point of their story he has to hurry off to the church."

Whether Dogberry and Verges are absolutely necessary to the working out of the plot or not, who would banish them from the drama? Aside from their delightful humour, the part they play in the action is peculiarly interesting and instructive. How admirably they illustrate the fact that not unfrequently the weak things of the world serve to confound the strong, and the plans of the wicked and wise are spoiled by the honest and foolish! Dogberry and his mates detect and expose the trickery that had deceived all their superiors in rank and culture. As Borachio says to Don Pedro, "I have deceived even your very eyes; what your *wisdoms* could not discover, these shallow fools have brought to light." It is Dogberry who vindicates Hero, and saves her good-for-nothing lover from the fate he deserved at the hands of Benedick. Even stupidity has its uses in the world, and if it be honest and faithful, it may triumph over the cursed craft of those who look down upon it with contempt. These villains had called Dogberry an "ass," but they were worse fools than he. There is no folly like that of the man who hopes to make falsehood and malice successful in the long run. The clown who does his duty according to his imperfect view of it may bring the best-laid schemes of the shrewd plotter to a disgraceful and disastrous end.

---

## The Time-Analysis of the Play

This is summed up by Mr. P. A. Daniel (*Trans. of New Shaks. Soc.* 1877–1889, p. 144) as follows: —

"In the endeavour to make the action of the play agree as far as possible with Leonato's determination in Act II. sc. i., that the marriage of Claudio and Hero shall take place on 'Monday . . . which is hence a just seven-night,' I have supposed the following days to be represented on the stage:

"1. Monday. Act I. and sc. i. of Act II.

"2. Tuesday. Act II. sc. ii.

"3. Wednesday. Act II. sc. iii.

"I place this scene in the third day (Wednesday). The love-conspirators would scarcely defer their attempt on Benedick's peace of mind to a later date; but yet, for the verisimilitude of their description of Beatrice's passion — 'she 'll be up twenty times a night, and there will she sit in her smock till she have writ a sheet of paper,' etc. — we must suppose a night or two to have passed since the opening scene.

"Thursday.
"Friday. } Blank.
"Saturday.

"4. Sunday. Act III. sc. i.–iii.

"In the opening speech of scene ii. Don Pedro says, 'I do but stay till your marriage be consummate, and then go I toward Arragon.' He has changed his mind, then, since the opening day, when he proposed to stay '*at the least a month*,' with Leonato.

"5. Monday. Act III. sc. iv. and v., Act IV. sc. i. and ii., Act V. sc. i., ii., and part of iii.

"6. Tuesday. Act V. sc. iii. (in part), and sc. iv.

"The first Tuesday even in this scheme might very well be left a blank, and the sc. ii. of Act II. be included in the opening Monday.

"I believe, however, that just as the Prince forgets his determination to stay 'at the least a month' at Messina, so the 'just seven-night' to the wedding was also either forgotten or intentionally set aside, and that only four *consecutive* days are actually included in the action of the drama.

"1. Act I. and Act II. sc. i. and ii.

"2. Act II. sc. iii. and Act III. sc. i.–iii.

"3. Act III. sc. iv. and v., Act IV., Act V. sc. i., ii., and part of iii.

"4. Act V. part of sc. iii. and sc. iv."

I am inclined to think that Mr. Daniel's perplexity in regard to

some points is due — partially at least — to Shakespeare's peculiar treatment of "dramatic time," to which I have referred more at length in the introduction to the revised *As You Like It.*

---

## List of Characters in the Play

The numbers in parentheses indicate the lines the characters have in each scene.

*Don Pedro:* i. 1 (66); ii. 1 (71), 3 (71); iii. 2 (51); iv. 1 (12); v. 1 (71), 3 (7), 4 (7). Whole no. 356.

*Don John:* i. 1 (2), 3 (46); ii. 1 (12), 2 (19); iii. 2 (38); iv. 1 (8). Whole no. 125.

*Claudio:* i. 1 (40); ii. 1 (28), 3 (37); iii. 2 (35); iv. 1 (59); v. 1 (58), 3 (15), 4 (21). Whole no. 293.

*Benedick:* i. 1 (99); ii. 1 (85), 3 (88); iii. 2 (9); iv. 1 (52); v. 1 (25), 2 (66), 4 (50). Whole no. 474.

*Leonato:* i. 1 (35), 2 (14); ii. 1 (30), 3 (46); iii. 2 (4), 5 (17); iv. 1 (69); v. 1 (108), 4 (25). Whole no. 357.

*Antonio:* i. 2 (15); ii. 1 (7); v. 1 (32), 4 (3). Whole no. 57.

*Balthazar:* ii. 1 (16), 3 (26). Whole no. 32.

*Conrade:* i. 3 (15); iii. 3 (20); iv. 2 (6). Whole no. 41.

*Borachio:* i. 3 (16); ii. 1 (4), 2 (39); iii. 3 (53); iv. 2 (4); v. 1 (24). Whole no. 140.

*Friar Francis:* iv. 1 (75); v. 4 (9). Whole no. 84.

*Dogberry:* iii. 3 (72), 5 (41); iv. 2 (50); v. 1 (35). Whole no. 198.

*Verges:* iii. 3 (14), 5 (9); iv. 2 (5); v. 1 (2). Whole no. 30.

*1st Watch:* iii. 3 (26); iv. 2 (6). Whole no. 32.

*2d Watch:* iii. 3 (8); iv. 2 (3). Whole no. 11.

*Sexton:* iv. 2 (17). Whole no. 17.

*Boy:* ii. 3 (2). Whole no. 2.

*Lord:* v. 3 (11). Whole no. 11.

*Messenger:* i. 1 (30). Whole no. 30.

*Hero:* i. 1 (2); ii. 1 (11); iii. 1 (78), 4 (18); iv. 1 (18); v. 4 (8). Whole no. 135.

*Beatrice:* i. 1 (57); ii. 1 (124), 3 (8); iii. 1 (10), 4 (18); iv. 1 (57); v. 2 (24), 4 (11). Whole no. 309.

*Margaret:* ii. 1 (6); iii. 1 (1), 4 (58); v. 2 (10). Whole no. 75.

*Ursula:* ii. 1 (11); iii. 1 (29), 4 (5); v. 2 (6). Whole no. 51.

In the above enumeration, parts of lines are counted as whole lines, making the total in the play greater than it is. The actual number of lines in each scene (Globe edition numbering) is as follows: i. 1 (330), 2 (29), 3 (77); ii. 1 (404), 2 (58), 3 (273); iii. 1 (116), 2 (137), 3 (193), 4 (99), 5 (69); iv. 1 (340), 2 (90); v. 1 (341), 2 (106), 3 (33), 4 (131). Whole no. in the play, 2826.

# INDEX OF WORDS AND PHRASES EXPLAINED


a (with verbal), 188
abused (= deceived), 172, 227
account, to make an, 161
ache (pronunciation), 196
achiever, 143
Adam, 153
advertisement, 216
advise, 209
afeard, 178
affect (= love), 154
affection, 171
affection unto, 230
after (adverb), 155
agate, 182
aim better at me, 188
alliance, 169
alms, 178
ambles, 221
ancientry, 163
angel (play upon), 173
another (= the other), 179
answer (legal), 222
antic (= buffoon), 182
anticly, 219
apparitions (metre), 205
apprehension, 197
approved (=proved), 171, 201, 210
argument (= power of reasoning), 183
argument (= proof), 179
argument (= subject), 152, 172
arras, 159
as (omitted), 174, 177
as full as (= fully as), 181
assembly (metre), 229
at a word, 163
Ate, 167
attired in wonder, 205

badge, 143
baldrick, 152
ballad-maker's pen, 152
barns (play upon), 196
bear-herd, 161
bear in hand, 210
bear it coldly, 188
beaten with brains, 231
become of (= come of), 207
behaviours, 172
being that, 209
bell (watchman's), 189
Bel's priests, 192
bent, 179, 206
beshrew, 217
bethink you, 223
bill (play upon), 193
bills, setting up, 146
bills (weapons), 144, 189
bird-bolt, 144
biting, 206
black (= dark), 182
blazon, 169
block, 147
blood (= blushes), 203
blood (= disposition), 158
blood (= passion), 165, 178
bloods, 192
boarded, 164
Borachio (derivation), 191
born under Saturn, 157
borrow money in God's name, 224
both in a tale, 212
brave, 231
break with, 154, 156, 188
breathing (= interval), 170
bring (= accompany), 185
broke cross, 220
bucklers, to give the, 225
buried face upwards, 187
but (transposed), 166
by (= about), 224
by (= from), 205
by the mass, 213
by this (of time), 143
by this light, 220, 230

candle-wasters, 214
canker (= canker-rose), 157
capon (play upon), 221
Carduus benedictus, 197
care killed a cat, 220
carpet-mongers, 225
carriage (= bearing), 158
carry (= manage), 179, 207
case (= mask), 163
censured (= judged), 179
certainer, 230
chain (usurer's), 165
Cham, the great, 169
charge (= burden), 148
charge (constable's), 189
charm for toothache, 188
cheapen, 173
cheer, 160
chid at, 204
church-bench, 191
cinque-pace, 162
circumstances, 188
civil (play upon), 169
clamour, 226
claw (= flatter), 157
clerk, 163
cog, 219
coil, 191, 226
come over (play upon), 225
commendable (accent), 182
commodity (play upon), 193
composed, 223
conceit, 169
conditions, 187
conference, 179, 180
confirmed countenance, 229

conjecture (= suspicion), 203
consummate, 185
consumption, 230
contemptible, 178
content yourself, 218
controlment, 157
convert (intransitive), 148
conveyance, 167
counsel, 178
Count Comfect, 211
county (= count), 165, 170, 211
courtesies, 211
cousins, 156
cry you mercy, 156
cue, 169
cunning (= knowing), 223
curiously, 221
curst, 160
curtsy, 161
cuts, 194

daffed, 178, 218
dangerous, 219
deadly (adverb), 221
dear, 148, 201, 212
dearness of heart, 188
defeat (= ruin), 201
defend (= forbid), 163, 212
deny (= refuse), 210
deprave (= slander), 219
despite (verb), 172
Dian (= moon), 202
difference, for a, 147
discover (= reveal), 156, 177, 188
disloyal, 188
displeasure, 159, 179
division, 222
do him so ill-well, 163
do me right, 221
doctor (= learned man), 222
Dogberry, 189
Don Worm, 226
done to death, 227
dotage, 178
double-dealer, 231
doubt (= suspect), 219
down sleeves, 194
draw, 220
draw (play upon), 186
drovier, 165
drum and fife, 173
dumb show, 179
dumps, 176

eat (= eaten), 207
eat your word, 210
ecstasy (= madness), 177
eftest, 213
element, 170
enamoured on, 164
encounters, 192, 203
enforced (= compelled), 229
engaged (= pledged), 212
enraged (= intense), 177
entertained for, 159
estimation (= worth), 171
Ethiope, 229
Europa, 229
even (= plain), 210
every day, to-morrow, 183
exceeding (adverb), 178, 231
exceeds (intransitive), 194
excellent (adverb), 178
eye and prospect, 208

fairest grant, 155
faith, 147, 165
familiar (metre), 230
fancy (= love), 186
fashion-monging, 219
father (verb), 148
favour (= face), 163
fence, 217
festival terms, 226
fetch in, 152
fine (= end), 152
fire in the ears, 184
fleer, 217
flight (= arrow), 144
flout (= mock), 154, 219, 231
flout old ends, 154
flouting Jack, 149
foining, 218
fool, 169
for (= as for), 188, 229
frame (= devising), 207
frame (= order), 204
framed (= devised), 217
from (= away from), 182
full of proof, 219
furnish (= dress), 183

galliard, 162
gallop, false, 198
girdle, to turn his, 220
gives me out, 166
go about (= undertake), 157, 202
go in (= join in), 150
go to church, 170
go to the world, 169
God save the foundation! 225
God 's a good man, 199
good den, 188, 219
good-year, the, 156
gowns (of constables), 212
grace (= favour), 157, 173
gracious (= lovely), 203
guarded (= trimmed), 154
guerdon, 227
gull (= trick), 177
guts, 175

had as lief, 176
had like, 219
haggards, 181
hale (= draw), 175
halfpence, 177
hand, a dry, 163
hang (play upon), 186
hangman, 185
happiness (= good luck), 148
have it full, 148
hearken after, 222
hear tell, 170
heart-burned, 160
heavily, 227
Hercules, the shaven, 192
high-proof, 220
his (= its), 226
hobby-horses, 188
hold friends with, 148
hold it up, 177
holds you well, 188
holp, 145
honest as the skin between his brows, 198
honest slanders, 183
how (= however), 182, 221
Hundred Merry Tales, 164

I 'll none, 161, 173
idea (= image), 208
ill-well, 163
important (= importunate), 161

impose me to, 224
impossible, 164, 167
in (= into), 173
in question, 193
in respect of, 194
in such a kind, 207
in that, 231
in the career, 220
in the fleet, 164
in the height, 210
incensed, 223
infinite (noun), 177
injuries, 209
inkhorn, 199
innocent (= silly), 226
Innogen, 142
instances, 172
intend (= pretend), 172
invention, 207, 224
inwardness, 209

Jack, 149, 218
Jack Wilson, 175
jade's trick, 149
jealous complexion, 169
jealousy (= suspicion), 172
Jew (contemptuous), 180
just (= exact), 170
just (= just so), 161, 221

keep below stairs, 225
keep himself warm, 147
kid-fox, 174
kind (= natural), 143
kindly (= natural), 202
kindness (= tenderness), 143
knight (feminine), 227
knit, 201

labour (transitive), 224
lacked (= missing), 208
lantern, 189
lapwing, 180
large (= free, broad), 178, 201
largely, 230
learn (= teach), 201
leavy, 176
let it cool, 178
level (= aim), 209
lewd (= vile), 225
liberal (= licentious), 203
light (play upon), 195
Light o' love, 196
like of me, 229
limed, 184
liver, 208
lock (= love-lock), 192, 224
lodge in a warren, a, 166
low (of stature), 182
lustihood, 217
lute-string, 187
luxurious (= lustful), 201

mannerly (adverb), 162
March-chick, 159
marry with, 229
match (= marry), 161
matter (= sense), 170
may (= can), 203, 210
me, 159, 192
measure (play upon), 162
meddle or make, 190
medicinable, 171
meet with (= even with), 145
merely (= entirely), 179
merry (= joyful), 161
mile (plural), 173
mired, 204
misgovernment, 203
misprising, 181
misprision, 206
misuse (= deceive), 172
misused (= abused), 166
model, 158
moe, 176
Montanto, 143
moral, 198, 215
mortal, we are all, 146
mortifying, 157
mountain of affection, 170
move (a question), 202
moving-delicate, 208
music (= musicians), 227

naught, 221
naughty, 214
near (= intimate with), 164
news (number), 156, 164
night-gown, 194
night-raven, 176
no such matter, 150, 179
noble (play upon), 173
non-come, 200
nor . . . not, 164
not (transposed), 206
note (= mark), 187
nothing (pronunciation), 174
nuptial, 202

of (= by), 148
of (= on), 198
of (partitive), 149
of my word, 231
off the matter, 198
old, 226
old ends, 154
on (= of), 204
only (transposed), 164, 185
orb, 202
orchard (= garden), 156, 172
orthography, 173
ostentation, 207
outfacing, 218
outward happiness, 178
outward hideousness, 219
overborne, 178
overmastered, 161

packed, 224
paint out, 188
palabras, 198
paper bullets, 180
partridge wing, 164
passion (= sorrow), 215
patience (trisyllable), 214, 215
pent-house, 191
Philemon's roof, 163
piece of flesh, 214
Pigmies, 168
pikes, 225
pipe and tabor, 173
pleached, 180
pleasant, 144
please it, 149
pleasure (verb), 220
pluck up, 222
possess (= inform), 224
possessed (= influenced), 192
pound (plural), 148, 199
practice (= plotting), 206, 223
preceptial medicine, 215
predestinate, 149
present (= represent), 191
presently, 148, 155, 172, 209
press to death, 182

Prester John, 168
prized (= estimated), 183
project, 182
prolonged, 209
proof (= experience), 165
proof (= trial). 201
proper (= handsome), 178
proper (ironical), 158, 211
properest, 221
propose (noun), 180
proposing (= talking), 180
protest (= proclaim), 221
push, 216

quaint, 195
qualify, 230
quarrel to, a, 166
queasy, 171
question, 193, 229
quips, 179
quirks, 179
quit (= requite), 207

rabato, 193
rack, 208
rearward, 204
reasons (play upon), 222
recheat, 152
reclusive, 209
reechy, 192
remorse (= pity), 208
render (= give), 201
render up this woe, 229
reportingly, 185
reprove (= disprove), 179
reverence, 217
rheum (= tears), 226
rob from, 158
rule (= disorder), 190

's (= it 's), 194
sad (= serious), 149, 159, 170
sadly (= seriously), 179
salved, 155
Saturn, born under, 157
saving your reverence, 195
scab (play upon), 191
scambling, 218
scape, 148
scorn with my heels, 196
season (verb), 204
self-endeared, 182
sentences, 180
seven-night, 170
several (= separate), 228
shames, 205
shrewd, 160
side sleeves, 194
sigh away Sundays, 150
simpleness, 182
sits the wind, 177
slops, 180
smirched, 192, 204
smoking musty room, 159
so (omitted), 204
soft and fair, 230
soft you, 222
sort (= fall out), 209, 229
sort (= rank), 143
speaks poniards, 167
speed 's, 228
spell backward, 182
spirits (monosyllable), 203
squarer, 148
squire (contemptuous), 158
staff (= lance), 220
stale (= wanton), 172, 202
stalk (verb), 176
stand thee, 201
start-up, 159
still (= constantly), 148
stomach, 157, 180
stops (of lute), 187
strain (= family), 171
strain (= feeling), 214
study, 208
stuff (noun), 181
stuffed, 140
style (play upon), 225
style of gods, 210
subscribe, 226
success (= issue), 208
sufferance, 216
suffigance, 199
suit (= agree), 214
sunburnt, 169
sure, 160
swift (= ready), 183
sword (swearing by), 210
sworn brother, 147

take up (play upon), 193
tax (= reproach), 145
temper (= mix), 171
temporize, 153
terminations, 167
that, 177
thee (= thou), 180
there 's an end, 164
thick-pleached, 156, 180
this seven year, 192
though, 165
throughly, 207
thy much, 203
tickling (trisyllable), 183
tinsel, 195
tire (= head-dress), 194
't is once, 155
to (in comparisons), 222
to thy head, 217
tongues, he hath the, 221
toothache, charm for, 188
toothpicker, 168
trace (= walk), 180
trans-shape, 221
treatise (= talk), 155
trencher-man, 146
trial of a man, 217
trim (ironical), 211
trow, 197
truer, 143
tuition, 153
turned Turk, 197
tyrant, 149

unclasp (metaphor), 155
unconfirmed, 192
underborne, 195
undergoes, 226
untowardly, 189
up and down, 163
upon, 208, 213, 223
use (= interest), 168
used (= practised), 225
usurer's chain, 165

valuing of, 204
Venice, 153
Verges, 189
very much glad, 143
vice (= screw), 225
victual, 145
vouchsafe, 185

wag (= begone), 215
wake (= rouse), 219
walk (= withdraw), 179
wash his face, 187
watchings, 171
weak, 181
weeds (= dress), 228
well-favoured, 189
well-suited, 223
what (= who), 146, 164
what is he for a fool? 158

when all 's done, 175
which (= what), 163
whiles, 223
whisper (transitive), 180
who (= whom), 150, 222
wide, 202
willow (emblem of unhappy love), 165
win me and wear me, 218
winded, 152
wisdoms, 206, 223
wise gentleman, 221
wish (= bid), 181
wit (= wisdom), 178
with (= by), 161, 231
withal, 156, 180
wits, five, 146
woe, 229
wolves, 229
woman of the world, 169
woo, 174
woodcock (= a fool), 221
woollen, in the, 161
world to see, a, 199
worm (causing toothache), 186
worm (of conscience), 226
wring (= writhe), 215
writ (= written), 230
write against, 202
wronged, 166

# ROLFE'S ENGLISH CLASSICS

Edited by WILLIAM J. ROLFE, Litt. D.

Each, $0.56

---

## BROWNING'S SELECT POEMS

Twenty poems (including "Pippa Passes"), with Introduction, Life of Browning, Chronological Table of His Works, List of Books useful in studying them, Critical Comments, and Notes.

## BROWNING'S SELECT DRAMAS

"A Blot in the 'Scutcheon," "Colombe's Birthday," and "A Soul's Tragedy"—with Introduction, Critical Comments, and Notes.

## GOLDSMITH'S SELECT POEMS

"The Traveller," "The Deserted Village," and "Retaliation," with Life of Goldsmith, Recollections and Criticisms by Thackeray, Coleman the Younger, Campbell, Forster, and Irving, and Notes.

## GRAY'S SELECT POEMS

The "Elegy," "The Bard," "The Progress of Poesy," and other Poems, with Life of Gray, William Howitt's Description of Stoke-Pogis, and historical, critical, and explanatory Notes.

## MACAULAY'S LAYS OF ANCIENT ROME

With the Author's Preface and Introductions, Criticisms by John Stuart Mill, Henry Morley, "Christopher North," and others, historical and explanatory Notes, and copious Illustrations.

## MILTON'S MINOR POEMS

All of Milton's Minor Poems except the Translations, with biographical and critical Introductions, and historical and explanatory Notes.

## WORDSWORTH'S SELECT POEMS

Seventy-one Poems, with Life, Criticisms from Matthew Arnold, R. H. Hutton, Principal Shairp, J. R. Lowell, and Papers of the Wordsworth Society, and very full Notes. Illustrated by Abbey, Parsons, and other eminent artists.

---

AMERICAN BOOK COMPANY
(S. 96)

# NEW ROLFE SHAKESPEARE

Edited by WILLIAM J. ROLFE, Litt.D.

40 volumes, each, $0.56

THE popularity of Rolfe's Shakespeare has been extraordinary. Since its first publication in 1870-83 it has been used more widely, both in schools and colleges, and by the general reading public, than any similar edition ever issued. It is to-day the standard annotated edition of Shakespeare for educational purposes.

¶ As teacher and lecturer Dr. Rolfe has been constantly in touch with the recent notable advances made in Shakespearian investigation and criticism; and this revised edition he has carefully adjusted to present conditions.

¶ The introductions and appendices have been entirely rewritten, and now contain the history of the plays and poems; an account of the sources of the plots, with copious extracts from the chronicles and novels from which the poet drew his material; and general comments by the editor, with selections from the best English and foreign criticism.

¶ The notes are very full, and include all the historical, critical, and illustrative material needed by the teacher, as well as by the student, and general reader. Special features in the notes are the extent to which Shakespeare is made to explain himself by parallel passages from his works; the frequent Bible illustrations; the full explanations of allusions to the manners and customs of the period; and descriptions of the localities connected with the poet's life and works.

¶ New notes have also been substituted for those referring to other volumes of the edition, so that each volume is now absolutely complete in itself. The form of the books has been modified, the page being made smaller to adjust them to pocket use.

AMERICAN BOOK COMPANY
(S. 97)

# COMPOSITION-RHETORIC

By STRATTON D. BROOKS, Superintendent of Schools, Boston, Mass., and MARIETTA HUBBARD, formerly English Department, High School, La Salle, Ill. Price, $1.00

---

THE fundamental aim of this volume is to enable pupils to express their thoughts freely, clearly, and forcibly. At the same time it is designed to cultivate literary appreciation, and to develop some knowledge of rhetorical theory. The work follows closely the requirements of the College Entrance Examination Board, and of the New York State Education Department.

¶ In Part One are given the elements of description, narration, exposition, and argument; also special chapters on letter-writing and poetry. A more complete and comprehensive treatment of the four forms of discourse already discussed is furnished in Part Two. In each part is presented a series of themes covering these subjects, the purpose being to give the pupil inspiration, and that confidence in himself which comes from the frequent repetition of an act. A single new principle is introduced into each theme, and this is developed in the text, and illustrated by carefully selected examples.

¶ The pupils are taught how to correct their own errors, and also how to get the main thought in preparing their lessons. Careful coördination with the study of literature and with other school studies is made throughout the book.

¶ The modern character of the illustrative extracts can not fail to interest every boy and girl. Concise summaries are given following the treatment of the various forms of discourse, and toward the end of the book there is a very comprehensive and compact summary of grammatical principles. More than usual attention is devoted to the treatment of argument.

---

AMERICAN BOOK COMPANY
(S. 88)

M. Boyd.
Harriet Ryde - P. 46 to introduce
Claudio
Alice So
P. 48.

Claudio easily swaggering

40 or 50 years

Dogberry (character of constables)
He is always having much ado about
nothing
Self Centered, self conceit egotistical
Very stout & large, bellowing voice
(& hero among his own men)

Verges.
An echo to Dog - very old,
thin, emaciated, pleased face.
Friar Francis.

612-BAC-235